This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

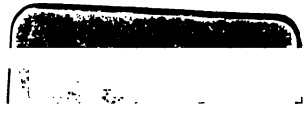
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

600084345U



FRENCH GRAMMAR.

BY

H. KRUEGER,

FRENCH MASTER IN THE GYMNASIUM,
THE ABERDEEN YOUNG LADIES' INSTITUTION,
THE WEST-END ACADEMY,
ETC., ETC.

SECOND EDITION.

EDINBURGH:
SETON & MACKENZIE.
LONDON: WHITTAKER & CO.
ABERDEEN: GEORGE DAVIDSON.

1867.

303. g. 39.

ABERDEEN: PRINTED BY JOHN AVERY.

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

THE Author has prepared the present work chiefly for his own pupils. He hopes, however, that it may commend itself as a suitable text-book for general use.

H. K.

Academy for Modern Languages

In Preparation,

A Series of Exercises to be used along with H. Krueger's French Grammar.

ENCOURAGED by the rapid sale of the First Edition, the Author again issues his little work with a few unimportant changes.

It was his endeavour from the first to furnish a cheap manual, suitable for beginners as well as for more advanced pupils, and to make it as clear and concise as he could, without omitting anything that he thought needful in a school-book.

He would take this opportunity of acknowledging his obligations to the Rev. John Longmuir, LL.D., and other friends, who examined the proof sheets, and made many valuable suggestions.

H. K.

Aberdeen, September, 1867.

OPINIONS OF THE PRESS.

. . . . . Mr. Krueger seems to have felt the want of a suitable text-book in conducting his classes, and has thus been led to prepare the unpretending manual before us, which has the merit of being comprehensive, well-arranged, accurate, and cheap. . . . . Definitions, descriptions and distinctions of linguistic usages, and grammatical rules, are embodied in terse, precise, and intelligible language. —*Aberdeen Free Press.*

. . . . . In the cheap, yet comprehensive work, whose title we have given above, he has placed a French Grammar within the reach of all, and yet it is so comprehensive that no larger work will be necessary for the pupil who has mastered it. . . . . —*Aberdeen Journal.*

. . . . . The page is now a picture as well as an assortment of facts, and many of the facts will be remembered because of the picture. In no work have we seen this system carried out better than in the little manual now before us, and we may instance p. 12 as a specimen of what may be called pictorial classification, and p. 77 as an example of capitally arranged tabulation. . . . . There is nothing superfluous in the work, neither is there anything necessary omitted; but by means of its admirable arrangement, it is made to contain what may be called an exhaustive treatment of the subject; and we unhesitatingly recommend its use in schools, for which its small size peculiarly fits it, as being by far the best text-book of its class.—*Border Advertiser.*

CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION.

Page.

The Alphabet, ... 1
Of Accents and other Marks, ... 1
Some Remarks on Pronunciation, ... 3
Words which are alike in both Languages, ... 4

PART I.

OF WORDS OR PARTS OF SPEECH.
Inflection, ... 5

CHAPTER I.

THE ARTICLE, ... 8
The Definite Article, ... 8
The Definite Article used in a Partitive sense, ... 9
The Indefinite Article, ... 9
PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE ARTICLE, ... 9
Cases in which the Definite Article is used, ... 9
Cases in which the Article is not used, ... 10

CHAPTER II.

THE NOUN OR SUBSTANTIVE, ... 11
Gender of Substantives, ... 11
Number of Substantives, ... 13
PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE SUBSTANTIVE, ... 14
Plural of Compound Substantives, ... 15

CHAPTER III.

THE ADJECTIVE, ... 16
Of the Formation of the Feminine of Adjectives, 16
Of the Formation of the Plural of Adjectives, ... 18
Of the Degrees of Comparison, ... 19
PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE ADJECTIVE, ... 21
Agreement of the Adjective with the Noun, ... 21
Place of Adjectives, ... 22
Adjectives which are placed before the Noun, ... 22
Adjectives which are placed after the Noun, ... 22
Government of Adjectives, ... 24
Adjectives in the Comparative and Superlative Degrees, ... 25

Page.

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES. Cardinal Numbers, ... 26
Ordinal Numbers, ... 27
POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES. Those joined to Nouns, ... 29
Those used without Nouns, ... 30
Particular Observations on the Possessive Adjectives, 30
DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES, ... 32

CHAPTER IV.

PRONOUNS.
OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS. *Celui*, ... 33
Ceci, Cela ; Ce, ... 34
PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN, ... 34
OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS, ... 35
TABLE OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS, ... 36
Of Personal Pronouns as Subjects, ... 37
Of Personal Pronouns as Objects, ... 38
Se, Soi, ... 40
Place, Order, &c., of Personal Pronouns, ... 40
OF RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS, ... 42
Qui, ... 42
Lequel, ... 43
Quoi ; Dont, où, en, y, ... 44
PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE RELATIVE PRONOUN, 45
OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS, ... 46
On, ... 46
Quiconque ; Quelqu' un, ... 47
Chacun ; Autrui ; Personne ; L' un l' autre, ... 48
L' un et l' autre, ... 49
INDEFINITE PRONOMINAL ADJECTIVES, ... 49
Chaque, ... 49
Nul, aucun, pas un ; Même ; Plusieurs ; Tout, ... 50
Quelconque ; Quel, ... 51
Quelque, ... 52
PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS, ... 53

CHAPTER V.

OF ADVERBS, ... 54
Formation of the Adverb, ... 54
Of the different Classes of Adverbs, ... 55
Place of Adverbs, ... 57
OBSERVATIONS ON SOME OF THE ADVERBS, ... 58
Beaucoup ; Bien ; Comme ; Davantage, ... 58
Plus tôt, plutôt ; Ne pas, ne point, ... 59
Seulement, ne-que, ... 60
Ne . . . jamais, ... 61

CHAPTER VI.

OF PREPOSITIONS, ... 61
Prepositions which require *de*, ... 62
Prepositions which require *à*, ... 62
The Place of Prepositions, ... 62

Page.

OBSERVATIONS ON SOME OF THE PREPOSITIONS, ... 63
A, ... 63
De; Dans, en, ... 64
Chez, ... 65
Devant, avant, ... 66

CHAPTER VII.

THE CONJUNCTIONS, ... 66
Conjunctions which govern the Infinitive, ... 67
Conjunctions which govern the Subjunctive, ... 67
Conjunctions which govern the Indicative, ... 67
Conjunctions which are sometimes followed by the Indicative, sometimes by the Subjunctive, ... 67
OBSERVATIONS ON SOME OF THE CONJUNCTIONS, ... 68
Que; Et-et; Ou-ou; Ni, ... 68

CHAPTER VIII.

THE INTERJECTIONS, ... 69

PART II.

OF THE VERB.

Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb—*Avoir*, to have, 70
Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb—*Être*, to be, 72

OF REGULAR VERBS, ... 75
Table comparing the General Terminations of the Tenses of Verbs, ... 77
Table showing the Formation of the Tenses, 78, 79
Conjugation of Active Verbs, ... 80
First Conjugation in *er*, ... 80
Second Conjugation in *ir*, ... 82
Third Conjugation in *oir*, ... 83
Fourth Conjugation in *re*, ... 84
Verbs conjugated Negatively, ... 85
Verbs conjugated Interrogatively, ... 87
Example of a Verb conjugated both Negatively and Interrogatively, ... 89
Conjugation of Passive Verbs, ... 90
Of Neuter Verbs, ... 92
Of Reflective Verbs, ... 92
Of Impersonal Verbs, ... 99
Observations on some Verbs of the First Conjugation and their peculiar Orthography, ... 101

OF IRREGULAR VERBS, ... 105
Table showing the Formation of the Tenses of the greater part of the Irregular Verbs, ... 106, 107
List of those Irregular Verbs whose Tenses can be formed from the Primitive Tenses, ... 108
Irregular Verbs of the First Conjugation, ... 112
Aller; S'en Aller, ... 112

Page.

Irregular and Defective Verbs of the Second Conjugation, ... 116
Irregular and Defective Verbs of the Third Conjugation, ... 126
Irregular and Defective Verbs of the Fourth Conjugation, ... 131

SYNTAX OF VERBS, ... 147

PLACE OF VERBS, ... 147
AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH ITS SUBJECT, ... 148
GOVERNMENT OF VERBS, ... 149
Verbs which require *à*, ... 150
Verbs which require *de*, ... 150
Verbs which, although they require a Preposition in English, yet take none in French, ... 151
VERBS FOLLOWED BY AN INFINITIVE, ... 151
Verbs which take *à* after them before another verb in the Infinitive, ... 152
Verbs which require *de* before another verb in the Infinitive, ... 152
Verbs which require no Preposition after them before another verb in the Infinitive, ... 153
Verbs which require *pour* after them before another verb in the Infinitive, ... 154
THE USE OF THE DIFFERENT MOODS, TENSES, AND PARTICIPLES, ... 154
THE INFINITIVE, ... 154
OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT, ... 154
OF THE PAST PARTICIPLE, ... 155
OF THE INDICATIVE MOOD—The Present, ... 157
The Imperfect and the Perfect, ... 158
The Compound of the Present, ... 158
The Compound of the Imperfect; The Compound of the Perfect; The Future, ... 159
OF THE CONDITIONAL MOOD, ... 160
OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD, ... 160
THE USE OF THE TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD, 161
REMARKS ON SOME VERBS, ... 162
Aller; Venir, ... 162
Faillir; Penser, ... 163
Faire; *Laisser*, ... 163
Devoir; Pouvoir; Vouloir, ... 163
Remarks on the Pronunciation of some Words, ... 165
List of Words of Peculiar Pronunciation, ... 165

TABLES.

Table of Personal Pronouns, ... 36
Comparison of the General Terminations of the Tenses of Verbs 77
Table showing the Formation of the Tenses, ... 78, 79
Table showing the Formation of the Tenses of the greater part of the Irregular Verbs, ... 106, 107

FRENCH GRAMMAR.

INTRODUCTION.

1. The French Alphabet contains twenty-five letters, viz :

A	B	C	D	E	F	G	H	I	J	K	L	M
Ah	bay	say	day	a	eff	zhay	ash	e	zhee	kah	ell	emm

N	O	P	Q	R	S	T	U	V	X	Y	Z.
enn	o	pay	kuh	err	ess	tay	u	vay	eeks	eegrec	zède

2. There are six vowels ; A, E, I, O, U, Y. All the other letters are consonants.

OF ACCENTS AND OTHER MARKS.

3. ACCENTS.—There are three accents, the *acute* (´), ACCENT AIGU ; the *grave* (`), ACCENT GRAVE ; and the *circumflex* (^), ACCENT CIRCONFLEXE.

4. The *acute* accent is used only over the vowel *e*, to give it a slender sound ; as, *été*, summer ; *vérité*, truth.

5. The *grave* accent is used over the vowel *e*, to give it a broad or open sound ; as, *très*, very ; *père*, father.

It is used also over :—		to distinguish them from :—	
à,	to.	*a*,	has.
là,	there.	*la*,	the, her, it.
dès,	*from*, since.	*des*,	of the, some.
où,	where.	*ou*,	or.

6. The *circumflex* accent is used over any vowel, to lengthen the sound; as, *âge*, age; *tête*, head; *gîte*, lodging; *apôtre*, apostle; *flûte*, flute.

It is used also over :—		to distinguish them from :—	
sûr,	sure.	*sur*,	upon.
mûr,	ripe.	*mur*,	wall.
dû,	owed.	*du*,	of the, some.
tû,	been silent.	*tu*,	thou.
crû,	grown.	*cru*,	believed.

7. APOSTROPHE.—The sign (') *apostrophe* denotes the elision or cutting off of a vowel at the end of a word, before another word beginning with a vowel or silent *h*; thus, *l'encre*, the ink, for *la encre*; *l'homme*, the man, for *le homme*; *s'il*, if he, for *si il*.

8. Elision takes place only with the vowels *a*, *e*, *i*, and generally in the words *le la* (both article and pronoun), *ce*, *de*, *je*, *me*, *te*, *se*, *ne*, *que* (both simple and compound). In *si*, if, the *i* is cut off before *il* and *ils* only.

9. No elision takes place before a *numeral adjective* or the adverb *oui*.

10. The final *e* of the preposition *entre* is dropped, and an apostrophe put instead of it, when it is compounded with another word beginning with a vowel; as, *entr'ouvrir*, *s'entr'aider*. The final *e* of the adjective *grand*, when compounded with a feminine noun, is also dropped, and an apostrophe put instead of it; as, *grand'mère grand'messe*.

11. DIÆRESIS.—The sign (¨) *diæresis*, TRÉMA, denotes the separation of two vowels into distinct syllables, and is placed over *e*, *i*, and *u*, when they are to be pronounced separately from the preceding vowel; thus, *Noël*, *naïf*, *Saül*.

12. The HYPHEN (-), LE TRAIT D'UNION, OR TIRET, is used in compound words, and between a verb and a pronoun in the interrogative form; as, *arc-en-ciel*, rainbow; *dix-sept*, seventeen; *avez-vous ?* have you ?

13. The CEDILLA (¸), LA CÉDILLE, is a mark like a comma, placed under the letter *C* when it stands before *a*, *o*, or *u*, to show that the *c* is to be pronounced like *s*; as, *garçon*, boy; *reçu*, received.

SOME REMARKS ON PRONUNCIATION.*

14. The letter *e* is pronounced very short when without any accent; as in *le, me, te, se.*

It is generally silent at the end of a word; as in *père, mère, classe.*

But when an unaccented *e* stands before two consonants, or an end consonant, it is pronounced like *è* (grave); as in *presse, follet.*

It also approaches the pronunciation of *è* (grave) before *s* in monosyllables; as in *les, des, mes.*

It is pronounced like *é* (acute) before *r* and *z*; as in *porter, donnez.*

Except in monosyllables in *r* which have unaccented *e*, when it is pronounced like è (grave); as, *fer, mer.*

15. *Oi* is sounded like *oah*; as *moi, toi, soi.*

16. *Ou* is sounded like *oo* in the English word *goose*; as, *coup, filou.*

U is sounded as in the Scotch word *gude.*

17. *C* and *g* are pronounced hard before the vowels *a, o,* and *u* (unless *c* has the cedilla, when it is pronounced like *s*); as *car, garde.*

18. *H* at the beginning of a word is for the most part silent, especially in words derived from the Latin; as, *habile, homme.*

19. Of words in which the initial *h* is sounded the most common are these:—

ha,	*le hameau,*	*hausser,*	*le hibou,*
le hâbleur,	*le hanneton,*	*haut,*	*la honte,*
la hache,	*harceler,*	*la hauteur,*	*hors,*
la haie,	*les hardes,*	*hé,*	*le houblon,*
la haine,	*la hardiesse,*	*le hérisson,*	*la houe,*
haïr,	*le haricot,*	*le héros,*	*la houssine,*
la haire,	*la harpe,*	*la herse,*	*le houx,*
la hallebarde,	*le hasard,*	*le hêtre,*	*hurler,*
halte,	*la hâte,*	*heurter,*	*la hutte.*

The letters *n* and *m* are nasal sounds, when preceded by a vowel, but not when double, or followed by a vowel.

* An alphabetical list of words of peculiar pronunciation will be found at the end of the Grammar.

WORDS WHICH ARE ALIKE IN BOTH LANGUAGES.

20. Most nouns and adjectives are alike in both languages, when ending in—

able,	as,	- capable, charitable, fable, table, etc.
ace,	,,	- face, préface, race, trace, etc.
acle,	,,	- miracle, obstacle, spectacle, etc.
ade,	,,	- ambuscade, cavalcade, sérénade, etc.
al,	,,	- fatal, général, local, moral, etc.
ance,	,,	- distance, ignorance, élégance, etc.
ant,	,,	- constant, élégant, instant, etc.
ence,	,,	- évidence, patience, silence, etc.
ent,	,,	- absent, accident, excellent, etc.
ge,	,,	- âge, cage, page, rage, etc.
ice,	,,	- avarice, justice, vice, etc.
ile,	,,	- docile, ductile, reptile, etc.
ine,	,,	- doctrine, famine, héroïne, etc.
ion,	,,	- action, éducation, nation, passion, etc.
ude,	,,	- fortitude, multitude, prude, etc.
ule,	,,	- mule, ridicule, etc.

21. Most nouns and adjectives become French by changing their terminations in the following manner, when ending in—

acy,	into	*atie*,	as	democracy,	*démocratie.*
ary,	,,	*aire*,	,,	contrary,	*contraire.*
ancy,	,,	*ance*,	,,	constancy,	*constance.*
ency,	,,	*ence*,	,,	agency,	*agence.*
ist,	,,	*iste*,	,,	artist,	*artiste.*
ive,	,,	*if*,	,,	pensive,	*pensif.*
our,	,,	*eur*,	,,	favour,	*faveur.*
ory,	,,	*oire*,	,,	victory,	*victoire.*
ous,	,,	*eux*,	,,	famous,	*fameux.*
ty { after a vowel }	,,	*té*,	,,	beauty,	*beauté.*
y { (except as the above) }	into	*ie*,	as	modesty,	*modestie.*

PART I.

OF WORDS OR PARTS OF SPEECH.

CLASSIFICATION.

22.—There are nine parts of speech in French; namely,

ARTICLE	PRONOUN	PREPOSITION
NOUN	VERB	CONJUNCTION
ADJECTIVE	ADVERB	INTERJECTION.

INFLECTION.

23. Inflection treats of the changes made on words to express various meanings and relations. It embraces *Declension*, *Comparison*, and *Conjugation*.

24. DECLENSION.—The article, noun, adjective, and pronoun, are inflected for gender, number, and case. This is called declension.

GENDER.—There are only two genders in French, the *Masculine* and the *Feminine*.

NUMBER.—There are two numbers, the *Singular* and the *Plural*.

CASE.—In French as in English, certain prepositions correspond to the case endings of the classical languages. These are *de*, of or from, *à*, to or at. The Possessive case in English is rendered in French by the preposition *de*.

25. COMPARISON.—The adjective and the adverb admit three degrees of comparison, the *positive*, *comparative*, and *superlative*. But these are formed not by inflection but usually by prefixing the adverbs *plus*, more; *moins*, less; *très*, very, &c.

CONJUGATION.—The verb is inflected for *mood*, *tense*, *number*, *and person*. This is called conjugation. (For Conjugation, see Part II.) The preposition, conjunction, and interjection are not inflected.

CHAPTER I.

THE ARTICLE.

26. The *Article* is a word placed before a noun to show the extent of its meaning. It is also used to point out the gender and number of the noun.

The article always agrees in gender and number with its noun.

There are two articles, the definite and the indefinite.

I. THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

27. The definite article is—

Sing.—LE, masc., LA, fem.; Plu.—LES, masc. or fem. the; as, *le père*, the father; *la mère*, the mother; *les pères*, the fathers; *les mères*, the mothers.

28. When *le* or *la* comes before a noun beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, the *e* or *a* is cut off, and an apostrophe is put instead of the vowel omitted; as, *l'ami*, the friend, instead of *le ami*; *l'eau*, the water, instead of *la eau*; *l'homme*, the man, instead of *le homme*.

29. When the preposition *de*, of, precedes the article *le* before a noun, beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirate, *de le* is contracted into *du*, and when *de* stands before *les* masc. or fem., *de les* is contracted into *des*; as, *du père*, of the father, instead of *de le père*; *des pères*, of the fathers, instead of *de les pères*.

30. When the preposition *à*, to, precedes the article *le* before a noun, beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirate, *à le* is contracted into *au*, and when *à* stands before *les*, masc. or fem., *à les* is contracted into *aux*; as, *au père*, to the father, instead of *à le père*; *aux pères*, to the fathers, instead of *à les pères*.

31. There is no contraction when *de* or *à* precedes either the feminine article *la*, or the article *l'*, before a noun beginning with a vowel or *h* mute.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE IN ITS VARIOUS FORMS.

Sing.—LE, m.; LA, f.; L', m. or f. | Plur.—LES, m. or f., the.

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.	
Masc.	*Fem.*	*M. or F.*	*M. or F.*	
LE	LA	L'	LES	The.
DU (for *de le*)	DE LA	DE L'	DES (for *de les*)	of *or* from the.
AU (for *à le*)	À LA	À L'	AUX (for *à les*)	to *or* at the.

EXAMPLES.

SINGULAR.

Masc.		*Fem.*	
le père,	the father.	*la mère,*	the mother.
du père,	of the father.	*de la mère,*	of the mother.
au père,	to the father.	*à la mère,*	to the mother.

PLURAL.

les pères,	the fathers.	*les mères,*	the mothers.
des pères,	of the fathers.	*des mères,*	of the mothers.
aux pères,	to the fathers.	*aux mères,*	to the mothers.

Before a noun beginning with a vowel or silent *h*:—

SINGULAR.

l'enfant,	the child.	*l'homme,*	the man.
de l'enfant,	of the child.	*de l'homme,*	of the man.
à l'enfant,	to the child.	*à l'homme,*	to the man.

PLURAL.

les enfants,	the children.	*les hommes,*	the men.
des enfants,	of the children.	*des hommes,*	of the men.
aux enfants,	to the children.	*aux hommes,*	to the men.

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE USED IN A PARTITIVE SENSE.

32. When in English, before a noun, *some* or *any* is expressed or understood, the preposition *de* with the article is used : that is, *du* before a noun masculine beginning with a consonant, *de la* before a noun feminine beginning with a consonant, *de l'* before a noun masculine or feminine beginning with a vowel or silent *h*, and *des* before any noun in the plural.

EXAMPLES.

J'ai DU pain, DU jambon, et DE LA moutarde.	*I have* some *bread*, some *ham and* some *mustard*.
Nous avons DES plumes et DE L'encre.	*We have* some *pens and* some *ink*.

33. EXCEPTIONS to the above rule :—

DE alone is used,

1.—When the noun is preceded by an adjective ;

2.—When the noun, as object, comes after a verb conjugated negatively.

EXAMPLES.

Il a *de* bon pain.	*He has* some *good bread*.
Il n'a pas *de* plumes.	*He has* no (not any) *pens*.

REMARK.—Sometimes the phrase has a negative form but a positive sense. In that case, the word which serves as complement to the preposition must always be preceded by the article ; as,

Je n'ai pas *de* L' argent pour le dépenser follement.	*I have no money to spend foolishly.*
N'avez-vous pas *de* LA santé, *de* LA fortune, *des* amis ? Que vous faut-il davantage ?	*Have you not health, fortune, friends ? What do you need more ?* [Académie française.]

II. THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

34. The indefinite article is for the masculine UN, for the feminine UNE.

DE OR *A* PRECEDING THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE.

EXAMPLES.

Masc.	*Fem.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*
UN	UNE	*un garçon*, a boy.	*une fille*, a girl.
D'UN	*D'UNE*	*d'un garçon*, of a boy.	*d'une fille*, of a girl.
À UN	*À UNE*	*à un garçon*, to a boy.	*à une fille*, to a girl.

PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE ARTICLE.

35. The article is used in French before every *common* noun taken in a *determinate sense*, unless there is another word which performs the same office ; as, *le* tigre est cruel, *the tiger is cruel.*

36. When the article is used before one noun, and other nouns follow, the article must be repeated before each of these nouns ; as,

LE pain, LA viande, et L' eau sont sur la table.	The *bread, meat, and water are on the table.*

CASES IN WHICH THE DEFINITE ARTICLE IS USED IN FRENCH THOUGH NOT IN ENGLISH.

37. The article is used in French, though not in English, before every noun employed in a general sense, or taken in the whole extent of its signification ; as,

LES hommes sont mortels.	*Men are mortal.*
LA vertu est aimable.	*Virtue is amiable.*

38. The article is used before the names of *countries, provinces, mountains,* and *rivers* ; as,

LA France,	France.	LE Mont Blanc,	Mount Blanc.
L' Angleterre,	England.	LE Rhin,	the Rhine.
LA Normandie,	Normandy.		

Countries having the same name as their capitals do not take the article.

39. The article is used before the names of *arts, sciences, virtues,* and *vices ;* as,

Ils vont à l'école pour apprendre *les* mathématiques.	*They go to school to learn mathematics.*
LA colère est le plus violent des conseillers.	*Anger is the most violent of counsellors.*

40. The article is used before adjectives, verbs, adverbs, prepositions, and conjunctions, used substantively ; (words so used are all masculine) ; as,

Le noir et *le* blanc sont deux couleurs opposées.	*Black and white are two opposite colours.*

41. The definite article is used in French instead of the indefinite in English, before nouns of *measure, weight,* and *number ;* as,

Un schelling LA livre.	*A shilling a pound.*
Cinq francs L'aune.	*Five francs an ell.*
Dix sous LA douzaine.	*Ten sous a dozen.*

REMARK.—In speaking of time, *a* or *an* is expressed by *par* ; as,

Vingt francs par semaine.	*Twenty francs a week.*

CASES IN WHICH THE ARTICLE IS NOT USED.

42. The article is not used before names of countries (in Europe) when they are preceded by the preposition *en*, or by the verbs *arriver* and *venir*, or when they qualify a noun ; as,

Il demeure *en* Angleterre.	*He lives in England.*
Je viens de France.	*I come from France.*
Vins de France.	*French Wines.*

REMARK.—Most names of countries out of Europe have the article.

43. No article is used in French before the ordinal numbers, *first, second, third,* etc., when they come after the name of a sovereign ; as,

Napoléon premier.	*Napoleon the first.*
Louis quatorze.	*Louis the fourteenth.*

44. No article is used in French before nouns expressing *country, title, profession, trade,* or before a noun explaining the one which precedes it ; as,

Etes-vous Anglais ?	*Are you an Englishman ?*
Il est médecin.	*He is a doctor.*
Il est négociant.	*He is a merchant.*
Nous venons de Rouen, ville de Normandie.	*We come from Rouen, a town of Normandy.*

When, however, an adjective is joined to the noun, or after *c'est*, the indefinite article is expressed.

45. No article is used, but only the preposition *de*, after *adverbs* or *nouns of quantity* ; as,

Beaucoup DE patience.	*Much patience.*
Assez DE pain.	*Enough of bread.*
Une douzaine DE chemises.	*A dozen shirts.*
Un verre D' eau.	*A glass of water.*

REMARK I.—*Bien*, much, many, is the only adverb of quantity which requires the preposition *de* with the article ; as,

Il a *bien des* fleurs.	*He has* many *flowers.*

REMARK II.—If the noun which follows the noun or adverb of quantity is specified by what follows, it requires the article ; as,

J'apporterai une bouteille *du* vin qui est arrivé hier.	*I shall bring a bottle* of the *wine which arrived yesterday.*

46. No article is used after *quel, quelle*, what, used as an exclamation ; as,

Quel homme !	What a man !
Quelle imprudence !	What an imprudence !

47. No article is used when the noun and its preceding verb express but one idea in an idiomatic form ; as,

Avoir froid,	*to be cold.*	Rendre visite,	*to pay a visit.*
Avoir faim,	*to be hungry.*	Prendre garde,	*to take care.*
Avoir raison,	*to be right.*	Faire peur,	*to frighten.*
Avoir tort,	*to be wrong.*	Parler français,	*to speak French.*

CHAPTER II.

THE NOUN OR SUBSTANTIVE.

48. A *Noun* is the name of a notion or of an actual thing ; as, *vertu*, *Londres*, *cité*.

A *proper* noun is a mere mark or meaningless name, distinguishing one or more individuals from others, but conveying no information as to the qualities or attributes of its possessor ; as, *Jules César*, *Louis*, *Paris*.

A Noun not Proper is :—

I. The name of a notion, of a material, or of a collective mass ; as, *vice*, *sucre*, *nation*, or,

II. It is a significant name, applied to a single object or to any one of a number of things, or of classes of things, signifying that they possess certain peculiarities or attributes ; as, *roi*, king ; *maison*, house ; *homme*, man.

49. A noun may be the *subject (nominative)* or *object (accusative)* of the verb ; as, *la mère* (s.) *aime ses enfants* (o.) ; the mother loves her children.

The noun is inflected for *gender* and *number*.

I. GENDER OF SUBSTANTIVES.

Rules for the gender of nouns are very vague and liable to many exceptions, and, therefore, a complete set will not be given here.

50. Of beings possessed of animal life, males are always masculine, and females, feminine.

The following are lists of some classes of nouns that are masculine or *feminine by signification* :—

51. Masculine are :—

	Examples.		Feminine Exceptions.
Names of Males	*le père,*	the father.	I. Towns.
,, Species	,, *lion,*	the lion.	*Londres.*
,, Countries	,, *Danemarc,*	Denmark.	*Jérusalem.*
,, Towns	*Paris,*	Paris	
,, Rivers	*le Rhin,*	the Rhine.	
,, Mountains	,, *Vésuve,*	Vesuvius.	II. Rivers.
			Lys.
,, Trees and most Shrubs	,, *sapin,*	the fir.	*Limmat.*
			Reuss.
			Theiss.
,, Seasons	*hiver,*	winter.	
,, Months	*mai,*	May.	
,, Days	*lundi,*	Monday.	III. Mountains.
,, Numbers (cardinal)	*le dix,*	the ten.	*Alps.*
,, Letters of Alphabet	*un a,*	an a.	*Vosges.*
			Pyrénées.
Also the following when used substantively :—			IV. Trees.
			yeuse.
Adjectives	*le bon,*	the good.	
Pronouns	,, *moi,*	I.	
Verbs	,, *manger,*	the eating.	V. Letters.
Adverbs	*le* or *les non*	the no, or noes.	*f, h, l, m, n, r, s.*
Prepositions	*le pour et le contre*	the pro and con.	

N.B. Names of countries, towns, and rivers ending in *e* mute are feminine ; as, *la France, la Seine.*

Exceptions.—*Le Danube, l' Elbe, le Tibre, le Rhône.*

52. II. Feminine are :—

Names of Females ; as, *la soeur,* the sister ; *la bru,* the daughter-in-law.

,, Flowers ; ,, *la rose,* the rose ; *la tulipe,* the tulip.

,, Fruits ; ,, *la poire,* the pear ; *l' orange,* the orange.

,, Notions ; ,, *la générosité,* the generosity ; *la rougeur,* the redness.

Except *le courage, le mérite.*

,, Sciences ; ,, *la Physique,* Physics, *la Botanique,* Botany.

53. List of words in frequent use which are masculine in one signification, and feminine in another.

	Masculine.	*Feminine.*
aide,	an assistant ;	a support.
aigle,	an eagle ;	a standard.
aune,	an alder tree ;	an ell.
barbe,	a horse (Barbary) ;	a beard.
barde,	a poet ;	a slice of bacon.

	Masculine.	*Feminine.*
cartouche,	an ornament ;	a cartridge.
coche,	a coach, a boat ;	a sow, a notch.
couple,	a man and his wife ;	a brace or pair of things.
crêpe,	crape ;	pancake.
enfant,	a male child, boy ;	a female child, a girl.
foret, forêt,	a gunlet ;	a forest.
livre,	a book ;	a pound.
manche,	a handle (of a tool) ;	a sleeve, English Channel.
mémoire,	a memoir, a bill ;	the memory.
merci,	thanks ;	mercy, grace, pity.
moule,	a model, a mould ;	a mussel (shell-fish.)
page,	a page (an attendant) ;	the page of a book.
personne,	nobody, no one (pronoun)	a person (noun).
poêle,	a stove ;	a frying pan.
poste,	a situation ;	a post office.
somme,	a sleep ;	a sum.
tour,	a tour, a trick ;	a tower.
voile,	a veil ;	a sail.

54. N.B. GENS, people, requires the words agreeing with it to be feminine when they precede, but masculine when they follow it ; as, ces BONNES *gens sont fort* CAPRICIEUX.

EXCEPTION.—*Tous* (masc.), instead of *toutes* (fem.) is employed when no other adjective precedes *gens*, or when the preceding adjective has the same termination for both genders ; as, TOUS *les gens sensés* ; TOUS *les braves gens.* But, TOUTES *les vieilles gens.*

II.—NUMBER OF SUBSTANTIVES.

GENERAL RULE.

55. The plural of nouns is formed by adding *s* to the singular ; as,

le père,	*the father.*	les pères,	*the fathers.*
la mère,	*the mother.*	les mères,	*the mothers.*
l'arbre,	*the tree.*	les arbres,	*the trees.*

EXCEPTIONS TO THE GENERAL RULE.

56. EXCEPTION I.—Nouns ending in *s*, *x*, or *z*, are the same in both numbers ; as,

le fils,	*the son.*	les fils,	*the sons.*
la voix,	*the voice.*	les voix,	*the voices.*
le nez,	*the nose.*	les nez,	*the noses.*

57. EXCEPTION II.—Nouns ending in *au* and *eu*, form *the plural by adding x* ; as,

le chapeau,	*the hat.*	les chapeaux,	*the hats.*
le couteau,	*the knife.*	les couteaux,	*the knives.*
le feu,	*the fire.*	les feux,	*the fires.*
le jeu,	*the game.*	les jeux,	*the games.*

58.—Also, some nouns, ending in *ou*, take *x*. These are :—

le bijou,	*the jewel.*	les bijoux,	*the jewels.*
le caillou,	*the pebble.*	les cailloux,	*the pebbles.*
le chou,	*the cabbage.*	les choux,	*the cabbages.*
le genou,	*the knee.*	les genoux,	*the knees.*
le hibou,	*the owl.*	les hiboux,	*the owls.*
le joujou,	*the plaything.*	les joujoux,	*the playthings.*

59. EXCEPTION III.—Most nouns ending in *al* and *ail* form their plural by changing *al* and *ail* into *aux* ; as,

le cheval,	*the horse.*	les chevaux,	*the horses.*
le canal,	*the canal.*	les canaux,	*the canals.*
le travail,	*the work.*	les travaux,	*the works.*

60. The following nouns, however, ending in *al* and *ail*, do not change their termination, but take *s* in the plural :—

le bal,	*the ball.*	l' attirail,	*the apparatus.*
le cal,	*the callosity.*	le détail,	*the detail.*
le carnaval,	*the carnival.*	l' éventail,	*the fan.*
le chacal,	*the Jackal.*	le gouvernail,	*the helm.*
le régal,	*the feast.*	le portail,	*the portal.*

Le bétail, sing., and les bestiaux, plur., are synonymous, both meaning cattle.

61. AÏEUL, CIEL, ŒIL, have two plurals.

aïeul, grandfather.	*aïeuls.*
aïeul, ancestor.	*aïeux.*
ciel, bedtester, or sky in a picture.	*ciels.*
ciel, sky, heaven.	*cieux.*
œil, in œils-de-bœuf, oval window.	*œils.*
œil, eye.	*yeux.*

PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE SUBSTANTIVE.

62. The following nouns have no plural :—

I.—Proper names when they are not used as common nouns ; as,

Les deux *Rousseau.* | Les deux *Sénèque.*

II.—Words taken from the Latin or from any other foreign language which have not yet been naturalised by frequent use ; as,

des Te Deum. | des post scriptum.

63. When proper names are used as class nouns they admit the plural; as, *Tous les hommes ne sauraient être des* CATONS.

64. Substantives, having a particular termination for the plural, in the language from which they are taken, retain this termination; as, *errata, duplicata.*

PLURAL OF COMPOUND SUBSTANTIVES.

65. A compound word is one made up of simple words of independent signification; as, Vice-amiral, *Vice-Admiral*; ver-à-soie, *silk worm.*

The formation of the plural of these depends on their composition.

66. RULE.—In a compound noun, declinable words have, and indeclinable words have not, the plural.

67. When a compound word is formed by the combination—

I. Of AN ADJECTIVE AND A NOUN, both take the sign of the plural; as,

le beau-frère, *the brother-in-law.*	les beaux-frères.
le grand-père, *the grand-father.*	les grands-pères.

But *grand* with a feminine noun takes an apostrophe, and remains unchanged in the plural; as,

la grand'-mère, *the grand-mother.*	les grand'-mères.

II. Of TWO NOUNS, both take the sign of the plural; as,

le chou-fleur, *the cauliflower.*	les choux-fleurs.

EXCEPTION.—Of TWO NOUNS JOINED BY A PREPOSITION, the first only takes the sign of the plural; as,

l'arc-en-ciel, *the rainbow.*	les arcs-en-ciel.

III. Of A VERB AND A NOUN, Of A PREPOSITION AND A NOUN, Of AN ADVERB AND A NOUN, } the noun alone takes the sign of the plural; as,

le casse-noisette, *the nutcracker.*	les casse-noisettes.
l'avant-coureur, *the forerunner.*	les avant-coureurs.

IV. When composed solely of such parts of speech as the VERB, ADVERB, or PREPOSITION, none of the parts of the compound takes the sign of the plural; as,

le passe-partout, *the master-key.*	les passe-partout.
un ouï-dire, *a hearsay.*	des ouï-dire.

68. Many compound nouns are formed in French by joining two nouns with the preposition *de* or *à*, and then the principal noun is placed before the noun which qualifies it.

69. *De is used when of, of the, composed of, made of, coming from, may be understood*; as,

The shipbuilder (builder *of* ships).	Le constructeur de navires.
The silver chain (chain *of* silver).	La chaine d' argent.
Burgundy wine (wine *coming from* Burgundy).	Vin de Bourgogne.

70. *À* is used when *for, for the purpose of, by means of,* or *with,* may be understood; as,

The bed-room (the room *for the purpose of* sleeping.)	La chambre à coucher.
The windmill (mill moved *by means of* the wind).	Le moulin à vent.

71. *La Fontaine's fables, Henry's sisters, the physician's house, his father's hat, &c.*, are rendered in French by placing the principal noun first and uniting them with *de*, with or without the article; as, *Les Fables* DE *la Fontaine, les soeurs* DE *Henri, la maison* DU *médecin, le chapeau* DE *son père, &c.*

CHAPTER III.

THE ADJECTIVE.

72. An *Adjective* is a word which expresses some quality or distinction belonging to a person or a thing.

73. Adjectives vary in French in their termination, for *gender*, and *number*, agreeing in gender and number with the nouns or pronouns to which they relate; as, *le petit jardin, les petits jardins; la petite maison, les petites maisons.*

I. OF THE FORMATION OF THE FEMININE OF ADJECTIVES.

74. GENERAL RULE.—The feminine of adjectives is formed by adding *e* mute to the masculine; as,

petit *(m.)*, petite *(f.)*, *small.* | joli *(m.)*, jolie *(f.)*, *pretty.*

75. EXCEPTION I.—Adjectives ending in *e* mute remain the same in the feminine; as,

agréable, *m.* or *f*; aimable, *m.* or *f.*

76. EXCEPTION II.—Adjectives ending in *x* change the *x into se*; as,

heureux *(m.)*, heureuse *(f.)*, *happy.* | jaloux *(m.)*, jalouse *(f.)*, *jealous.*

77. EXCEPTION III.—Adjectives ending in *f* change the *f* into *ve*; as,

actif *(m.)*, active *(f.)*, *active.* | vif *(m.)*, vive *(f.)*, *lively.*

78. EXCEPTION IV.—Adjectives ending in *el*, *eil*, *ien*, *on*, and *et*, double the last consonant, and add *e* mute; as,

Masc.	*Fem.*		*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
cruel,	cruelle,	*cruel.*	ancien,	ancienne,	*ancient.*
tel,	telle,	*such.*	bon,	bonne,	*good.*
pareil,	pareille,	*similar.*	muet,	muette,	*dumb.*

Prêt, ready, makes in the feminine *prête*.

79. The six following adjectives ending in *s*, double the *s* and add *e* mute:—

Masc.	*Fem.*		*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
bas,	basse,	*low.*	gras,	grasse,	*fat.*
épais,	épaisse,	*thick.*	gros,	grosse,	*big.*
exprès,	expresse,	*express.*	las,	lasse,	*tired.*

80. The following adjectives ending in *et* and *er* follow the general rule, but take a grave accent above the *e* which precedes the *t* or *r*:—

Masc.	*Fem.*		*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
complet,	complète,	*complete.*	secret,	secrète,	*secret.*
incomplet,	incomplète,	*incomplete.*	cher,	chère,	*dear.*
discret,	discrète,	*discreet.*	dernier,	dernière,	*last.*
indiscret,	indiscrète,	*indiscreet.*	fier,	fière,	*proud.*
inquiet,	inquiète,	*uneasy.*	premier,	première,	*first.*

81. EXCEPTION V.—Adjectives formed from a participle present, by changing *ant* into *eur*, make *euse* in the feminine; as,

flatteur *(m.)*, flatteuse *(f.)*, *flattering.* | trompeur *(m.)*, trompeuse *(f.)*, *deceiving.*

82. The following, however, change *eur* into *eresse*:—

Masc.	*Fem.*	
demandeur,	demanderesse,	*a plaintiff.*
défendeur,	défenderesse,	*a defendant.*
enchanteur,	enchanteresse,	*enchanting.*
pécheur,	pécheresse,	*a sinner.*
vengeur,	vengeresse,	*an avenger.*

83. *Majeur*, major; *meilleur*, better; *mineur*, minor; follow the general rule, as well as the adjectives ending in *érieur*; as,

Masc.	*Fem.*		*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
antérieur,	antérieure,	*anterior.*	majeur,	majeure,	*major.*
inférieur,	inférieure,	*inferior.*	meilleur,	meilleure,	*better.*

84. Nouns used adjectively ending in *teur*, change *teur* into *trice;* as,

accusateur *(m.)*, accusatrice *(f.)*, *an accuser.*
instituteur *(m.)*, institutrice *(f.)*, *a schoolmaster, a governess.*

85. *Empereur*, emperor, has *impératrice; gouverneur*, governor, *gouvernante; serviteur*, servant, *servante; chanteur*, singer, *chanteuse* and *cantatrice; chasseur*, hunter, *chasseuse* and *chasseresse.*

86. Words expressing *professions, trades*, etc., usually followed by men, even when exercised by women, have no feminine ; as,

auteur, *an author.* | imprimeur, *a printer.*

87. The following adjectives form their feminine irregularly :—

Masc.	*Fem.*		*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
blanc,	blanche,	*white.*	sot,	sotte,	*silly.*
franc,	franche,	*frank.*	nul,	nulle,	*null.*
sec,	sèche,	*dry.*	gentil,	gentille,	*genteel.*
frais,	fraîche,	*fresh.*	doux,	douce,	*sweet.*
caduc,	caduque,	*infirm.*	roux,	rousse,	*red.*
grec,	grecque.	*Greek.*	faux,	fausse,	*false.*
public,	publique,	*public.*	jumeau,	jumelle,	*twin.*
turc,	turque,	*Turkish.*	vieux,	vieille,	*old.*
long,	longue,	*long.*	beau,	belle,	*fine.*
bénin,	bénigne,	*benign.*	fou,	folle,	*foolish.*
malin,	maligne,	*malignant.*	mou,	molle,	*soft.*
favori,	favorite,	*favourite.*	nouveau,	nouvelle,	*new.*
traître,	traîtresse,	*treacherous.*			

REMARK.—The last four form their feminines from the masculines *bel, fol, mol, nouvel*, which are used before a *vowel* or *h* mute.

II.—OF THE FORMATION OF THE PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES.

88. GENERAL RULE.—The plural of Adjectives is formed like the plural of nouns, by adding *s* to the singular ; as,

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
petit *(m.)*	petite *(f.)*	petits *(m.)*	petites *(f.)*

There is no exception to this rule for the feminine.

89. EXCEPTION I.—Adjectives ending in *s* or *x* remain the same in the plural (masc.); as,

gras, *fat.* | heureux, happy.

90. EXCEPTION II.—Adjectives ending in *au*, take *x* in the plural (masc.); as,

beau, beaux. | nouveau, nouveaux.

91. EXCEPTION III.—Adjectives ending in *al*, change *al* into *aux* for the plural (masc.); as,

moral, moraux. | égal, égaux.

REMARK.—Some adjectives ending in *al* have no plural masc., and some take *s*; as, *frugal, fatal.*

92. *Tout*, all, drops the *t* in the masculine plural and has *tous*, but in the plural feminine it has *toutes.*

III.—OF THE DEGREES OF COMPARISON.

93. There are three degrees of comparison—the *positive*, the *comparative*, and the *superlative.*

The *positive* is the adjective in its simple form; as, *grand, petit, heureux.*

94. The *comparative* expresses a comparison between two or more objects. There are three kinds of comparatives, viz: the comparative of *superiority*, *inferiority*, and *equality.*

95. The comparative of *superiority* is formed by putting *plus*, more, before the adjective and *que*, than, after it; the comparative of *inferiority*, by placing the adverb *moins*, less, before the adjective and *que*, than, after it; or by putting the verb in the negative with *si*, so, before the adjective, and *que*, as, after it; and the comparative of *equality* by putting *aussi*, as, before the adjective, and *que*, as, after it.

EXAMPLES.

Vous êtes *plus heureux que* moi.	*You are* happier than *I am.*
Rome est *moins* peuplée *que* Naples.	*Rome is* less *populous* than *Naples.*
Son père n'est pas *si* riche *que* le vôtre.	*His father is not* so *rich* as *yours.*
Cette maison est *aussi* grande *que* la vôtre.	*This house is* as *large* as *yours.*

Plus and moins must be repeated before every adjective.

96. The SUPERLATIVE expresses the quality in the highest or in the lowest degree. There are two kinds of superlative; the superlative *relative*, and the superlative *absolute*.

97. The superlative relative is formed by putting the article *le*, *la*, *les*, before the comparative or one of the possessive adjectives *mon*, *ton*, *son*, *notre*, *votre*, *leur*.

EXAMPLES.

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
	Masc.	*Fem.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
Pos.	beau	belle	beaux	belles	*beautiful.*
Com.	plus beau	plus belle	plus beaux	plus belles	*more beautiful.*
Sup.	le plus beau	la plus belle	les plus beaux	les plus belles	*the most beautiful.*

	SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
	Masc.	*Fem.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
Pos.	poli	polie	polis	polies	*polite.*
Com.	moins poli	moins polie	moins polis	moins polies	*less polite.*
Sup.	le moins poli	la moins polie	les moins polis	les moins polies	*the least polite.*

98. The superlative *absolute* is formed by putting before the adjective an adverb expressing a very high degree; like *très*, *fort*, *bien*, very; *infiniment*, infinitely; as,

Cet homme est *très*-savant.	*This man is* very *learned.*
Dieu est *infiniment* juste.	*God is* infinitely *just.*

99. The adjectives *bon*, *mauvais*, and *petit*, and also the adverbs *bien*, *mal*, and *peu*, are compared irregularly and in the following manner:—

Positive.		*Comparative.*		*Superlative.*	
bon,	*good.*	meilleur,	*better.*	le meilleur,	*the best.*
mauvais,	*bad.*	pire,	*worse.*	le pire,	*the worst.*
petit,	*little.*	moindre,	*less.*	le moindre,	*the least.*
bien,	*well.*	mieux,	*better.*	le mieux,	*the best.*
mal,	*badly.*	pis,	*worse.*	le pis,	*the worst.*
peu,	*little.*	moins,	*less.*	le moins,	*the least.*

Plus mauvais, *plus petit*, *plus mal*, may also be used instead of *pire*, *moindre*, and *pis*.

PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE ADJECTIVE.

I.—AGREEMENT OF THE ADJECTIVE WITH THE NOUN.

100. GENERAL RULE.—The adjective must agree in gender and number with the noun or pronoun to which it belongs; as,

Le BON père.	Les BONS pères.
La BONNE mère.	Les BONNES mères.

The same rule refers to past participles used adjectively.

101. REMARK I.—The adjectives *nu*, bare, and *demi*, half, when placed *before* a substantive, remain invariable; but, when placed *after* the substantive, they agree with it; as,

NU-pieds, *barefoot.*	Une DEMI-heure, *half-an-hour.*
Aller les pieds NUS, *to go barefoot.*	Une heure et DEMIE, *an hour and a-half.*

102. REMARK II.—The adjective *feu*, late, agrees only when it stands immediately *before* the noun; as,

La FEUE reine, / FEU la reine, } *The late Queen.*

103. Adjectives used adverbially remain in the masculine singular; as,

Ces livres coûtent CHER.	*These books are dear.*
Cette fleur sent BON.	*This flower smells well.*

104. An adjective referring to two or more nouns is put in the masculine plural, if the nouns are either *all* masculine or of *different* genders. But if the nouns are *all feminine*, the adjective is put in the feminine plural; as,

Le père et le fils sont *contents.*	*The father and son are content.*
La maison et le jardin sont *petits.*	*The house and the garden are small.*
La mère et la fille sont *heureuses.*	*The mother and daughter are happy.*

105. The masculine substantive should be placed immediately before the adjective when the substantives are of different genders, and the adjective does not end in *e* mute; as,

Il a eu une jambe et un bras *emportés.*	*He had one leg and one arm carried off.*

106. An adjective placed after two or more substantives which are synonymous, agrees only with the last; as,

Il jouit d'un repos, d'une tranquillité *complète*. | *He enjoys rest and complete tranquility.*

107. When substantives are separated by the conjunction *ou*, or, the adjective agrees with the last; as,

Un orgueil ou une vanité excessive. | *An excessive pride or vanity.*

II.—PLACE OF ADJECTIVES.

108. Some adjectives are always placed before the noun; others are placed either before or after it, as harmony requires; but most are placed after the noun.

1. ADJECTIVES WHICH ARE PLACED BEFORE THE NOUN.

109. The following frequently-occurring adjectives of one or two syllables, precede their substantives: *Bon*, good; *meilleur*, better; *mauvais*, bad; *pire*, worse; *méchant*, wicked; *beau*, beautiful; *joli*, pretty; *gros*, thick; *grand*, tall; *petit*, little; *moindre*, less; *sot*, foolish; *digne*, worthy; *jeune*, young; *vieux*, old; also, generally, *haut*, high; *vaste*, vast; *double*, double; as,

Un *bon* livre, *a good book.* | Un *petit* oiseau, *a small bird.*

2. ADJECTIVES WHICH ARE PLACED AFTER THE NOUN.

110. Those adjectives which denote *colour* or *form*, and also those which express some physical or natural quality, follow their substantives; as,

Du drap *bleu.*	*Blue cloth.*
Un gilet *blanc.*	*A white waistcoat.*
Une table *ronde.*	*A round table.*
L'air *froid.*	*The cold air.*
Du beurre *frais.*	*Fresh butter.*

111. Adjectives derived from the names of nations, are placed after the noun; as,

Un général *français.*	*A French general.*
L'indolence *turque.*	*Turkish indolence.*

112. Adjectives formed from the past participle, and also many of those formed from the present participle, are placed after the noun; as,

Un homme instruit.	*A well-informed man.*
Un livre amusant.	*An amusing book.*

113. Almost all adjectives ending in *c*, *f* (except *chétif*), *esque*, *al*, *il*, *ule*, *ique*, are placed after the noun; as, un bien *public*; l'amour *filial*; un discours *puéril*.

114. Euphony requires that a monosyllabic noun should precede an adjective of several syllables; so, instead of un *incomparable* être, an incomparable being; un *remarquable* mot, a remarkable word; it should be un être *incomparable*; un mot *remarquable*.

115. Some adjectives have a literal meaning when placed after the noun; but a figurative meaning when placed before it; as,

Un homme aveugle, *a blind man.*	Un aveugle désir, *a blind wish.*
Un homme bon, *a good-natured man.*	Un bon homme, *a simple man.*
Un homme brave, *a brave man.*	Un brave homme, *an honest man.*
Un repas cher, *a dear meal (repast).*	Un cher ami, *a dear friend.*
Une femme cruelle, *a cruel woman.*	Une cruelle femme, *a freakish woman.*
Une chose certaine, *a certain thing (fact).*	Une certaine chose, *some certain thing.*
Une année entière, *a whole year.*	Une entière confiance, *entire confidence.*
Une porte fausse, *a false door.*	Une fausse porte, *a private door.*
Un fou furieux, *a furious madman.*	Un furieux menteur, *a terrible liar.*
Un homme grand, *a tall man.*	Un grand homme, *a great man.*
L'air grand, *a noble look.*	Le grand air, *noble manners.*
Le ton haut, *a loud tone.*	Le haut ton, *the arrogant manner.*
Une action juste, *a just action.*	Un juste prix, *a reasonable price.*
Un fruit mûr, *a ripe fruit.*	Une mûre délibération, *a mature deliberation.*
Du bois mort, *dead trees.*	Du mort bois, *wood of no value.*
Un homme pauvre, *a poor man.*	Un pauvre homme, *a man without genius.*
Un homme plaisant, *a pleasant man.*	Un plaisant homme, *a strange, ridiculous man.*
Un conte plaisant, *a pleasant story.*	Un plaisant conte, *an unlikely story.*
Un habit propre, *a clean coat.*	Mon propre habit, *my own coat.*
Une femme sage, *a prudent woman.*	Une sage-femme, *a mid-wife.*
Un homme vilain, *a mean man.*	Un vilain homme, *a disagreeable man.*

Although *un homme grand* means a tall man, and *un grand homme*, a great man; *un petit homme* means a small-sized man, and *un homme petit*, a mean man.

Un habit nouveau means a new-fashioned coat, *un nouvel habit*, another coat; *un homme seul*, a man alone; un seul homme, a *single man.*

III.—GOVERNMENT OF ADJECTIVES.

116. Those adjectives which are generally followed in English by *of*, *from*, *with*, or *by*, and likewise those which express *plenty*, or *scarcity*, are generally followed in French by *de* ; as,

Il est *digne* DE louange.	*He is* worthy of *praise.*
Nous sommes *contents* DE notre sort.	*We are* content with *our fate.*
Un thème *plein* DE fautes.	An exercise full of mistakes.

117. Those adjectives which, though not included in the above rule, yet take the preposition *de*, may be remembered. They are :—

agréable *de*,	*agreeable to.*	heureux *de*,	*happy to.*
aise *de*,	*glad to.*	inconsolable *de*,	*inconsolable at.*
capable *de*,	*able to.*	inquiet *de*,	*uneasy about.*
curieux *de*,	*curious to.*	reconnaissant *de*,	*grateful for.*

118. Those adjectives which denote *aptness*, *fitness*, *inclination*, or *habit*, generally take the preposition *à* ; as,

Il est *prêt à* partir.	*He is* ready to *set out.*

119. The following adjectives, though not followed by *to* in English, yet take *à* after them in French :—

ardent *à*,	*ardent in.*	prompt *à*,	*quick at.*
bon *à*,	*good for.*	propre *à*,	*fit for.*
lent *à*,	*slow in, or to.*	sensible *à*,	*sensible of.*
pareil *à*,	*like.*		

120. Adjectives which express *gladness* or *regret*, as *charmé*, *enchanté*, *fâché*, require the infinitive with *de*, or the subjunctive mood ; as,

Il est fâché de ne vous avoir pas rencontré.	*He is sorry not to have met you.*
Je suis fâché que vous ne m'ayez pas prévenu.	*I am sorry that you have not informed me of it.*

121. When *to* after an adjective can be changed into *towards*, it is rendered by *envers* ; as,

He is charitable TO, or TOWARDS *the poor.*	Il est charitable *envers* les pauvres.

122. When *c'est*, or *il est* (impersonal), is joined to an adjective, the former requires *à*, the latter *de* before an infinitive ; as,

C'est facile *à* comprendre.	*That is easy to understand.*
Il est beau DE pardonner.	*It is noble to forgive.*

123. Adjectives of dimension precede the noun of measure, and take *de* after them ; as,

Un bâton *long* DE trois pieds.	*A stick three feet long.*
Une maison haute DE cinquante *pieds.*	*A house fifty feet high.*

It would be as correct to say *un bâton de trois pieds* DE LONG, or DE LONGUEUR ; *une maison de cinquante pieds* DE HAUT, or DE HAUTEUR.—*(In this case* long *and* haut *are substantives).*

IV.—ADJECTIVES IN THE COMPARATIVE AND SUPERLATIVE DEGREES.

124. If, after a comparative, *que* is followed by a verb, *ne* is placed before the verb ; as,

Il est plus habile que vous *ne* pensez.	*He is more skilful than you think.*
Vous écrivez mieux que vous *ne* parlez.	*You write better than you speak.*

EXCEPTION 1.—When the verb is in the infinitive, *de* is placed before the verb ; as, *Il est plus facile de bien écrire que* DE *bien parler.*

EXCEPTION 2.—When the first sentence is in the negative, or interrogative, *ne* is not used ; as,

Il n' est pas plus heureux qu' il en a l' air.	*He is not happier than he appears.*
Puis-je être plus malheureux que je le suis ?	*Can I be more unfortunate than I am ?*

125. After a comparative, *by* is expressed by *de ;* as,

Il est plus grand DE toute la tête.	*He is taller by the whole head.*

126. When the superlative follows the noun, both take the article ; as,

Les hommes les plus actifs.	*The most active men.*
L'avocat le plus instruit.	*The most learned advocate.*

127. In expressing an idea of superiority, without any kind of comparison, the article before *plus, moins,* or *mieux,* remains in the masculine singular ; as,

C'est le matin que la rose est LE *plus* belle.	*It is in the morning that the rose is* most *beautiful.*
Il ne punissait pas ses enfants lors même qu' ils étaient LE *plus* coupables.	*He did not punish his children even when they were* most *guilty.*
Ce sont les livres que j' ai *le plus* consultés.	*These are the books which I have consulted* most.
Also,	
De ces deux soeurs, la cadette est celle qui est *le plus* aimée, or, *la plus* aimée.	*Of these two sisters, the younger is the one that is* most *liked.*

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

128. There are two different sorts of numeral adjectives; namely, *Cardinal* numbers, which serve to count or express the number of things, and *Ordinal* numbers, which denote the order or rank which persons or things hold with respect to one another.

129. The cardinal and ordinal numbers are of both genders, except *un*, which has in the feminine, *une*; *premier*, f. *première*; and *second*, f. *seconde*.

CARDINAL NUMBERS.

1 Un, m.; Une, f.	38 Trente-huit.
2 Deux.	39 Trente-neuf.
3 Trois.	40 Quarante.
4 Quatre.	41 Quarante et un.
5 Cinq.	42 Quarante-deux.
6 Six.	43 Quarante-trois.
7 Sept.	44 Quarante-quatre.
8 Huit.	45 Quarante-cinq.
9 Neuf.	46 Quarante-six.
10 Dix.	47 Quarante-sept.
11 Onze.	48 Quarante-huit.
12 Douze.	49 Quarante-neuf.
13 Treize.	50 Cinquante.
14 Quatorze.	51 Cinquante et un.
15 Quinze.	52 Cinquante-deux.
16 Seize.	53 Cinquante-trois.
17 Dix-sept.	54 Cinquante-quatre.
18 Dix-huit.	55 Cinquante-cinq.
19 Dix-neuf.	56 Cinquante-six.
20 Vingt	57 Cinquante-sept.
21 Vingt et un.	58 Cinquante-huit.
22 Vingt-deux.	59 Cinquante-neuf.
23 Vingt-trois.	60 Soixante.
24 Vingt-quatre.	61 Soixante et un.
25 Vingt-cinq.	62 Soixante-deux.
26 Vingt-six.	63 Soixante-trois.
27 Vingt-sept.	64 Soixante-quatre.
28 Vingt-huit.	65 Soixante-cinq.
29 Vingt-neuf.	66 Soixante-six.
30 Trente.	67 Soixante-sept.
31 Trente et un.	68 Soixante-huit.
32 Trente-deux.	69 Soixante-neuf.
33 Trente-trois.	70 Soixante-dix.
34 Trente-quatre.	71 Soixante et onze.
35 Trente-cinq.	72 Soixante-douze.
36 Trente-six.	73 Soixante-treize.
37 Trente-sept.	74 Soixante-quatorze.

75 Soixante-quinze.
76 Soixante-seize.
77 Soixante-dix-sept.
78 Soixante-dix-huit.
79 Soixante-dix-neuf.
80 Quatre-vingts.
81 Quatre-vingt-un.
82 Quatre-vingt-deux.
83 Quatre-vingt-trois.
84 Quatre-vingt-quatre.
85 Quatre-vingt-cinq.
86 Quatre-vingt-six.
87 Quatre-vingt-sept.
88 Quatre-vingt-huit.
89 Quatre-vingt-neuf.
90 Quatre-vingt-dix.
91 Quatre-vingt-onze.
92 Quatre-vingt-douze.
93 Quatre-vingt-treize.
94 Quatre-vingt-quatorze.
95 Quatre-vingt-quinze.
96 Quatre-vingt-seize.
97 Quatre-vingt-dix-sept.
98 Quatre-vingt-dix-huit.
99 Quatre-vingt-dix-neuf.
100 Cent.
101 Cent un.
102 Cent deux.
200 Deux cents.
300 Trois cents.
400 Quatre cents.
500 Cinq cents.
1000 mille.
5000 Cinq mille.
10,000 Dix mille.
100,000 Cent mille.
1,000,000 Un million.

In *cinq*, *six*, *sept*, *huit*, *neuf*, and *dix*, the last consonant is not pronounced when coming immediately before a word beginning with a consonant. The *p* of *sept* is not sounded.

ORDINAL NUMBERS.

1st Premier.
2nd Second, deuxième.
3rd Troisième.
4th Quatrième.
5th Cinquième.
6th Sixième.
7th Septième.
8th Huitième.
9th Neuvième.
10th Dixième.
11th Onzième.
12th Douzième.
13th Treizième.
14th Quatorzième.
15th Quinzième.
16th Seizième.
17th Dix-septième.
18th Dix-huitième.
19th Dix-neuvième.
20th Vingtième.
21st Vingt et unième.
22nd Vingt-deuxième.
23rd Vingt-troisième.
30th Trentième.
31st Trente et unième.
35th Trente-cinquième.
40th Quarantième.
47th Quarante-septième.
50th Cinquantième.
51st Cinquante et unième.
60th Soixantième.
68th Soixante-huitième.
70th Soixante-dixième.
71st Soixante et onzième.
72nd Soixante-douzième.
80th Quatre-vingtième.
81st Quatre-vingt-unième.
90th Quatre-vingt-dixième.
91st Quatre-vingt-onzième.
100th Centième.
101st Cent-unième.
1000th Millième.

All the ordinal numbers are formed in the same way; that is, by adding *ième* to the cardinal numbers, final e mute being *omitted*. It will also be observed that the f *in neuf changes into v*, and that instead of vingt-premier,

vingt-second; trente-premier, trente-second, &c., as in English, *vingt et unième, vingt-deuxième ; trente et unième, trente-deuxième*, &c., must be used.

130. The ordinal numbers have *s* in the plural.

131. Of the cardinal numbers, *vingt* and *cent* take *s* in the plural, except when they are followed by another number, or when used for the date of a year; as,

Quatre-*vingts.*	*Eighty.*
Deux *cents.*	*Two hundred.*
Quatre-*vingt*-dix.	*Ninety.*
Deux *cent* cinquante.	*Two hundred and fifty.*
L'an mil quatre cent quatre-*vingt.*	*In the year one thousand four hundred and eighty.*

132. *Mil*, instead of *mille*, is used in dates commencing with the Christian era; as,

En *mil* huit cent soixante.	*In the year* 1860.

133. In French, the *cardinal* numbers are used instead of the *ordinal* :—

1st, In naming days except the *first*, as,

Le *premier* mai.	*The first of May.*
Le *sept* avril.	*The* seventh *of April.*
Le *quatre* juillet.	*The* fourth *of July.*
Le *vingt* du mois prochain.	*On the* twentieth *of next month.*

134. 2nd, In speaking of Sovereigns; as,

Jacques *premier.*	*James* the First.
Henri *quatre.*	*Henry* the Fourth.
Charles *douze.*	*Charles* the Twelth.

But for *second*, either *deux* or *second* may be used.

The Emperor Charles V., and Pope Sixtus V., are called *Charles-Quint, Sixte-Quint.*

135. There are some nouns of number which are divided,

1st, Into *Collective;* as,

Une douzaine, *a dozen.*	Une vingtaine, *a score.*

2nd, *Distributive;* as,

La moitié, the half.	Le quart, the quarter.

3rd, *Proportional;* as,

Le double, *the double;* le triple, *(the) triple;* le quadruple, *(the) fourfold.*

136. Some numeral expressions are employed in French, differently from the English usage ; e. g.,

A week.	Huit jours.
A fortnight.	Quinze jours.
Twelve o'clock (noon).	Midi.
Twelve o'clock (night).	Minuit.
Half-past twelve (noon).	Midi et demi.
Both.	Les deux. / Tous deux. / Tous les deux. } See Rule 234. / L'un et l'autre (See Rule 225).
Twice two is four.	Deux fois deux font quatre.
One and one are two.	Un et un font deux.
Day about.	De deux jours l'un. / Tous les deux jours.

POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

I.—THOSE JOINED TO NOUNS.

137. They are :—

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
Masculine.	*Feminine.*	*For both Genders*	
mon	ma	mes	*my.*
ton	ta	tes	*thy.*
son	sa	ses	*his, her, its.*
notre	notre	nos	*our.*
votre	votre	vos	*your.*
leur	leur	leurs	*their.*

138. These *Possessive Adjectives* agree in gender and number with the nouns they limit, and must, along with the accompanying preposition, be repeated before each of them ; as,

Mon livre, *mon* papier, et *ma* plume sont dans *mon* pupitre.	My *book, paper, and pen are in my desk.*
J'écris *à votre* frère et *à votre* sœur.	*I write* to your *brother and sister.*

REMARK.—They agree in French with the noun *following*, and not with that preceding ; that is, with the object *possessed* and not with the possessor ; as,

Ma tante a vendu *son jardin.*	*My aunt* has sold her garden.
A-t-elle vu son père?	*Has she seen* her father?

139. When a feminine noun, or the adjective going before it, begins with a vowel or silent *h*, *mon*, *ton*, or *son* is used instead of *ma*, *ta*, or *sa*, for the sake of euphony; as,

Son innocence.	*His* or *her innocence.*
Son histoire.	*His* or *her history.*
Mon unique consolation.	*My sole consolation.*

II.—THOSE USED WITHOUT NOUNS.

140. They are:—

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
Masc.	*Fem.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
le mien	la mienne	les miens	les miennes	*mine.*
le tien	la tienne	les tiens	les tiennes	*thine.*
le sien	la sienne	les siens	les siennes	*his, hers, its.*
le nôtre	la nôtre	les nôtres	les nôtres	*ours.*
le vôtre	la vôtre	les vôtres	les vôtres	*yours.*
le leur	la leur	les leurs	les leurs	*theirs.*

141. When the preposition *de*, of, or *à*, to, precedes one of the possessives, it is used, as these prepositions always are, before the definite article; as,

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
Masc.	*Fem.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
le mien	la mienne	les miens	les miennes	*mine.*
du mien	de la mienne	des miens	des miennes	*of mine.*
au mien	à la mienne	aux miens	aux miennes	*to mine.*

142. The possessive adjective always relates to some noun spoken of before, with which it agrees in gender and number; as,

Ma sœur et *la sienne.*	*My sister and* his, or hers.
Votre livre et *le mien.*	*Your book and* mine.
Vos plumes et *les leurs.*	*Your pens and* theirs.

PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

143. The possessive adjective of the first person (*mon, ma, mes,*) is used in French, though not in English, before names of relatives or friends; as,

Mon père, avez-vous vu *ma* mère?	*Father, have you seen mother?*
Comment vous portez-vous, *ma*	How do you do, *aunt*?

144. REMARK.—In speaking to a person of his relatives or friends, *monsieur, messieurs, madame, mesdames, mademoiselle* or *mesdemoiselles*, is, out of politeness, generally put before the possessive adjectives; as,

J' ai vu *monsieur* votre père.	*I have seen your father.*
Comment se porte *mademoiselle* votre sœur?	*How is your sister?*

145. The article may be used instead of the possessive adjective,

1st, When the sense clearly shows who is the possessor; as,

Il a mal AU pied.	*He has a sore foot.*
J' ai mal à LA jambe.	*My leg is sore.*

2nd, Before a noun being the direct object, when a personal pronoun, as indirect object, sufficiently supplies the place of the possessive; as,

Il m'a coupé LES cheveux.	*He has cut my hair.*

146. When *its* and *their* relate to inanimate objects, they are expressed by *en*; as,

Cette Université est très-fréquentée, les professeurs EN sont si savants.	*This university is much frequented, its professors are so learned.*
J'aime notre verger; la verdure EN est belle, l' ombre EN est agréable, les fruits EN sont de même excellents.	*I like our orchard:* its *verdure is beautiful,* its *shadow agreeable,* its *fruit is also excellent.*

EXCEPT, 1st, When preceded by a preposition.

2nd, When joined to a noun, if subject, qualified by an adjective.

3rd, When *its* or *their* occurs in the same sentence with the possessor as the subject; as,

Cet arbre est remarquable par la grosseur de *ses* fruits.	*This tree is remarkable for the size of* its *fruit.*
Cette ville a *ses* beautés; *ses* bâtiments magnifiques étonnent tous les étrangers.	*This town has* its *beauties;* its *magnificent buildings astonish all strangers.*

147. When *mine, thine, his, hers, ours, yours, theirs,* are used with the verb *to be,* in the sense of *to belong,* they are expressed by *à moi, à toi, à lui,* m.; *à elle,* f.; *à nous, à vous, à eux,* m.; *à elles,* f.; as,

Ces livres sont *à lui.*	*These books are* his.
Cette plume est-elle *à vous?*	*Is this pen* yours?

148. When after *être,* in the sense of *to belong,* a noun in the possessive case *is preceded* by a possessive adjective, and no other *noun follows, à to, is put* before the possessive adjective; as,

This house is *my father's*.	*Cette maison est* à mon père.
Whose book is this? It is *my brother's*.	*A qui est ce livre? C' est* à mon frère.

149. REMARK.—*A relative of mine, a friend of yours,* are rendered by *un de mes parents* (one of my relatives); *un de vos amis* (one of your friends).

DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES.

150. The *Demonstrative Adjectives* are always joined to a noun which they particularly specify or point out. They are, before a noun masculine singular :—

CE, *this* or *that*; as, *ce* livre, this *book*.

Before a noun masculine singular, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute :—

CET, *this* or *that*; as, { *cet* enfant, this *child*. / *cet* homme, this *man*.

Before a noun feminine singular :—

CETTE, *this* or *that*; as, *cette* montre, this *watch*.

Before any noun in the plural, masc. or fem. :—

CES, *these* or *those*; as, *ces* livres, *ces* montres.

151. The demonstrative adjectives must be repeated in French before every substantive to which they apply, though not expressed in English; as,

Ces pommes et *ces* poires sont douces.	These *apples and pears are sweet*.

152. When the object spoken of is to be more particularly pointed out, the demonstrative adjectives require the adverb *ci*, contraction for *ici* (here), or *là* (there), after the noun; as,

Ce garçon-*ci* est plus sage que celui-là.	*This boy is better than that (one).*
Ces pommes-là sont plus douces que *celles-ci*.	*Those apples are sweeter than these.*

CHAPTER IV.

PRONOUNS.

153. A pronoun is a word used instead of a noun. There are five kinds of pronouns, viz. :—the *Demonstrative*, the *Personal*, the *Relative*, the *Interrogative*, and the *Indefinite*.

I.—OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

154. These pronouns are used to point out the nouns for which they stand. They are :—

SINGULAR.			PLURAL.		
Masc.	*Fem.*		*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
celui	celle	*this.*	ceux	celles	*these.*
celui-ci	celle-ci	*this.*	ceux-ci	celles-ci	*these.*
celui-là	celle-là	*that.*	ceux-là	celles-là	*those.*

ceci,	*this.*
cela,	*that.*
ce,	*this, that, it.*

CELUI, CELLE, CEUX, CELLES.

155. These pronouns are used to avoid the repetition of a noun expressed before, and must agree with it in gender and number; as,

J' ai apporté mon livre et *celui* de mon frère.	*I have brought my book and* that *of my brother.*
Nous avons reçu vos lettres et *celles* de votre frère.	*We have received your letters and* those *of your brother.*

156. When two or more objects have been spoken of, *celui-ci*, *celle-ci*, *ceux-ci*, *celles-ci*, *celui-là*, *celle-là*, *ceux-là*, *celles-là*, are used; the first, with reference to the nearest, the latter, with reference to the more distant object; as,

Lequel de ces deux livres préférez-vous ?—Je préfère *celui-ci* à *celui-là*.	*Which of these two books do you prefer ?—I prefer* this *to* that.
Choisissez *de ces fleurs*, prenez *celles-ci ou celles-là*.	*Choose from these flowers*, take these or those.

CECI ; CELA.

157. *Ceci, this,* and *cela, that,* are used to point out an object without naming it ; as,

Ceci me plaît.	This *pleases me.*
Cela me déplaît.	*I dislike* that.
Qui a dit *cela ?*	*Who has said* that ?
C'est *cela.*	*That's it.*
N'est-ce que *cela ?*	*Is it only that ? (Is that all ?)*

CE.

158. The demonstrative pronoun *ce* is invariable. Joined to the verb *être* it enters into a great number of phrases, which are for the most part gallicisms. (Acad.) It is also followed by *qui* or *que ;* as,

C'est lui qui a dit cela.	It is *he who said that.*
Qui *est-ce* ?	*Who* is it ?
C'est votre frère.	It is *your brother.*
Ce fut une grande joie pour nous.	This was *great joy to us.*
Ce qui nous plaît.	What (that which) *pleases us.*
Ce que je vous ai dit.	What *I have told you.*

Also,

Il avait dessein d'attaquer, et pour *ce,* pour *ce* faire, il commanda. . .	*He had the intention to attack, and for* that, *in order to do* that, *he commanded.* . .
Ce doit être un beau spectacle.	That *must be a fine sight.*

PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUN.

159. The demonstrative pronouns *celui, celle, ceux, celles,* are followed by the relatives *qui, que, dont, auquel, à laquelle,* when placed before a *verb,* and by the preposition *de* when placed before a *noun ;* as,

Celui *que* vous avez rencontré.	*The one whom you have met.*
Est-ce là votre montre ?—Non, c'est *celle de* mon frère.	*Is that your watch ?—No, it is my brother's (that of my brother).*

160. REMARK I.—When *celui, celle, ceux, celles,* are followed by the relatives *qui, que, dont, auquel, à laquelle,* they are generally expressed in English by *he who, she who, they who, those who* or *whom ; that which, those which,* etc. ; as,

Celui qui aime la vertu est heureux.	He who *loves virtue is happy.*
Ceux que vous avez achetés.	Those which *you have bought.*

[redacted] II.—*Whose* book is this ?—It is my brother's. Is [redacted] *—No, it is my uncle's,* &c., are rendered in French

by—*À qui est ce livre?—C' est celui de mon frère. Est-ce là votre maison?—Non, c' est celle de mon oncle.*

C' EST, CE SONT, etc.

162. When *ce* is immediately followed by the verb *être*, it requires this verb to be in the singular, except when it is followed by the third person plural; as,

C' est nous qui avons remporté la victoire.	*It is we who have gained the victory.*
Ce sera vous, messieurs, qui le ferez.	*It is you, gentlemen, who will do it.*
Ce sont eux qui ont fait cela.	*It is they who have done that.*

163. REMARK.—*Ce* is generally preferred to *il, elle, ils, elles*, when the verb *être* is followed by a noun, accompanied by the article or a possessive adjective, whereas, *il, elle, ils, elles*, must be used when the verb *être* is followed by an adjective; as,

Connaissez-vous Paul et Richard? CE sont *les* meilleurs *élèves* de la classe avancée.	*Do you know Paul and Richard? They are the best pupils in the advanced class.*
Que fait votre frère?—*Il* est médecin.	*What does your brother do?—He is a physician.*
Qu' est-ce que ce monsieur?—*C'* est *un* médecin.	*What is this gentleman?—He is a physician.*
C' est *un* Tacite.	*He is a Tacitus.*
Allons voir la maison que j' ai achetée; *elle* est très-*belle*.	*Let us go to see the house I have bought: it is very fine.*

164. *Ce* must be repeated before the verb *être* when the first part of the sentence begins with *ce qui* or *ce que* (which are used in the sense of *what, that which*)—the former as the subject, the latter as the object; as,

Ce qui le retient, *c'est* la maladie de son fils.	*That which keeps him* (here) *is the illness of his son.*
Ce que je crains le plus, *c'est* de lui déplaire.	*What I fear most is to incur his displeasure.*

Ce, however, is not repeated when the verb *être* is followed by an adjective or a past participle without a noun; as,

Ce qui est fait est bon.	*What is done is good.*

II.—OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

165. *Personal* Pronouns are substituted for the names of persons or things.

There are three persons: the first is the person who speaks, *the second is the* person spoken to, and the third is *the person spoken of.*

TABLE OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

		SINGULAR.				PLURAL.			
			Masc.		*Fem.*			*Masc.*	*Fem.*
I. SUBJECTIVE NOMINATIVE.	1st, When Subject of the verb, (*See Rule* 166)	Je (*I*)	tu (*thou*)	il (*he, it.*)	elle (*she, it.*)	nous (*we*)	vous (*you*)	ils (*they*)	elles (*they*)
	2nd, When employed alone, as answer, or when joined to other words which form the subject, etc. (*See Rules* 167 *and* 168)	moi	toi	lui	elle	nous	vous	eux	elles
II. INDIRECT OBJECT.	When Indirect Object governed by the preposition *à*, to (understood) :*								
	1st, Before the verb,..... (*See Rule* 170)	me (*to me*)	te (*to thee*)	lui (*to him, to it.*)	lui (*to her, to it.*)	nous (*to us*)	vous (*to you*)	leur (*to them*)	leur (*to them*)
	2nd, After the verb,..... (*See Remark after Rule* 170)	moi	toi	lui	lui	nous	vous	leur	leur
III. DIRECT OBJECT.	1st, When Direct Object of the verb,..... (*See Rule* 176)	me	te (*thee*)	le (*him, it.*)	la (*her, it.*)	nous (*us*)	vous (*you*)	les (*them*)	les (*them*)
	(In the imperative affirmative, *moi* or *toi* is used instead of *me* or *te*, and placed after the verb.).								
	2nd, When employed alone as answer, or when joined to other words which are direct objects,..... (*See Rule* 177)	moi	toi	lui	elle	nous	vous	eux	elles

* When the preposition *à*, to, must be expressed (or after any other preposition) *moi*, *toi*, *lui*, *elle*, *nous*, *vous*, *eux*, or *elles* is used. *(See Rule* 171*)*.

I.—OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS AS SUBJECTS.

166. When the personal pronouns *I, thou, he* or *it, she* or *it; we, you, they*, are the subjects or nominatives of the verb they are expressed by JE, TU, IL *m.*, ELLE *f.*; NOUS, VOUS, ILS *m.*, ELLES *f.*; as,

Je parle, *tu* parles, etc. | I *speak*, thou *speakest*, etc.

167. *I, thou, he* or *it, she* or *it; we, you, they*, are rendered by MOI, TOI, LUI, ELLE; NOUS, VOUS, EUX, ELLES:—

1st. When used alone in answer to a question; as,

Qui a fait cela?—*Moi.* | *Who has done that?*—I.

2nd. When they are joined to a noun or pronoun by a conjunction; as,

Lui et elle. | *He and she.*
Mon père et moi. | *My father and I.*

3rd. When they stand after a comparative; as,

Il est plus âgé que *moi.* | *He is older than* I.

4th. After *c'est, ce sont, c'était, ce fut, ce sera*, etc; as,

C' est *moi, It is* I. | Ce sont *eux, m., elles, f. It is* they.

5th. When followed by the relative pronouns *qui, que*, the adjective *seul*, or a present participle; as,

Moi QUI ai lu. | I who *have read.*
Eux, QUE je comblais de bienfaits. | They, whom *I overloaded with benefits.*
Lui SEUL résista à mes prières. | He alone *resisted my prayers.*
Eux, COMPRENANT la signification. | They, understanding *the meaning.*

168. REMARK.—The above pronouns are used instead of *Je, tu*, etc.:—

1st. When a verb has two or more pronouns as subjects; as,

Elle, lui, et *moi*, nous viendrons. | She, he, *and* I *will come.*

2nd. When they point out the part taken in an act by different persons; as,

Eux l'ont poursuivi et *lui* l'a arrêté. | They *pursued him and* he *stopped him.*

From politeness, vous *(you) is generally used instead of* tu *(thou). Then the verb is put in the plural, but the adjective or participle which follows remains in the singular*; as,

Monsieur, vous serez content. | Sir, you will be satisfied.

II.—OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS AS OBJECTS.

1. INDIRECT OBJECT.

169. A personal pronoun is the *indirect object*, when it is preceded by the preposition *de*, of, or *à*, to, either expressed or understood.

170. When personal pronouns are governed by the preposition *à*, to, *understood*, they are expressed by ME, TE, LUI, *m.* and *f.*; NOUS, VOUS, LEUR, *m.* and *f.*, and placed before the verb; as,

Je *lui* donne.	*I give* (to) him *or* (to) her.
Nous *leur* donnons.	*We give* (to) them.

REMARK.—In the second person singular, and first or second person plural imperative affirmative, the personal pronoun is placed immediately after the verb, and *moi*, *toi*, are used instead of *me*, *te*; as,

Donnez-moi.	*Give me.*
Coupe-toi les ongles.	*Cut thy nails.*

Whereas, in the negative it remains; as,

Ne me donnez pas.	*Do not give me.*
Ne te coupe pas les ongles.	*Do not cut thy nails.*

171. When the preposition *à*, to, must be *expressed*, MOI, TOI, LUI, ELLE; NOUS, VOUS, EUX, ELLES, are used, and placed after the verb. This takes place:—

1st. When the verb has two or more indirect objects, and with all reflective verbs; as,

Je parle *à vous* et *à lui*.	*I speak* to you *and* to him.
Je me fie *à elle*.	*I trust* to her.

2nd. With *aller*, to go; *courir*, to run; *marcher*, to walk; *penser* and *songer*, to think; *venir*, to come; *viser*, to aim at; *être* (when it means to belong); *avoir*, to have, employed with the words *affaire*, *égard*, *rapport*, and *recours*; as,

Je *pense* souvent *à lui*.	*I often* think of him.
Il *vint* À NOUS.	*He* came to us.
Ce jardin *est* À MOI.	*This garden* is mine.
J'avais *recours* À LUI.	*I had* recourse to him.

REMARK.—The pronouns *moi, toi, lui, elle, nous, vous, eux, elles*, are always used after any preposition whatever; as,

Venez *avec moi.*	*Come* with me.
Il est *contre eux.*	*He is* against them.

172. When *to it, to them*, have reference to *inanimate* objects, they are translated by *y*; as,

J'ai reçu sa *lettre*, j' Y répondrai.	*I have received his* letter, *I will reply* to it.

173. Sometimes Y is also used in reference to persons; as,

Je connais cet *homme*, et je ne m' Y fie pas.	*I know this* man *and I do not trust* (to) him.
Cette *femme* est méchante, nous ne nous Y fions pas.	*This* woman *is wicked, we do not trust* (to) her.

174. Instead of *de lui, d'elle, d'eux, d'elles*, EN is used in reference to inanimate objects; as,

Je ne m' EN souviens plus.	*I do not remember* it *any longer.*
Qu' EN pensez-vous?	*What do you think* of it?
Parlez-vous de cette affaire?—	*Do you speak of this matter?*—
Nous EN parlons.	*We speak* of it.

175. Sometimes *en* may be used in reference to persons; as,

Ne s' entretient-on pas de ces *hommes?*—On n' EN parle pas.	*Do not people converse about these* men?—*They do not speak* of them.

---

2. DIRECT OBJECT.

176. When personal pronouns are the direct objects (accusative) of the verb, they are expressed by ME, TE, LE, LA, NOUS, VOUS, LES, *m.* and *f.*; as,

Vous *me* négligez.	*You neglect* me.
Je *le* loue.	*I praise* him.
Je *les* connais.	*I know* them.
Vous *nous* oubliez.	*You forget* us.

After an imperative affirmative, as in indirect objects, *moi, toi*, are used instead of *me, te.* (See Remark after Rule 170.)

REMARK.—Instead of *me, te, le, la*, when they come before a vowel or *h* mute, *m', t', l', l',* are used; as,

Je *l'* admire.	*I admire him or her.*

177. *Me, thee, him, her, us, you, them,* are translated by *moi, toi, lui, elle, nous, vous, eux, elles,* in the same cases in which *moi, toi, lui,* etc., must be preferred to *Je, tu, il,* etc. (see Rule 167); as,

Qui inviterez-vous?—*Vous, lui* et *elle.*	*Whom will you invite?*—You, him, *and* her.

OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS—

SE, SOI.

178. *Se, soi,* are used in the third person only, for both persons and things.

SE is used before a verb.

SOI is used generally after a preposition; as,

Il *se* flatte.	*He flatters* himself.
Ils *se* flattent.	*They flatter* themselves.
Ils *se* parlent.	*They speak* to each other.
Le vice est odieux *de* SOI.	*Vice is odious* of itself.
Chacun songe quelquefois *à* SOI.	*Every one thinks sometimes* of himself.

s' is put instead of *se* when standing before a vowel or before *h* mute.

PLACE, ORDER, ETC., OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

179. Personal Pronouns are generally placed *before* the verb in the simple tenses, and before its auxiliary in compound tenses; as,

Je parle, *tu* parles, etc.	I *speak,* thou *speakest,* etc.
Je vous louerai.	I *shall praise* you.
Je la louerais.	I *would praise* her.
Je l' admire.	I *admire* him, her, it.
*Il me l'*a donné.	He *has given* it to me.

180. EXCEPTION I.—In the interrogative, the pronoun, though nominative to the verb, comes after it.

Parlez-vous?	*Do you speak?*

REMARK.—After *qu' est-ce que?* what? (what is it that?) *est-ce que?* is it that? the pronoun, as subject, is placed before the verb; as,

Qu' est-ce que vous savez?	*What do you know?*
Est-ce que vous êtes malade?	*Are you (are you really) ill?*

Whereas,

Que savez-vous?	*What do you know?*
Êtes-vous malade?	*Are you ill?*

181. EXCEPTION II.—When the pronoun is the nominative to the verb, and the latter is preceded by *aussi, au moins, à peine, du moins, encore, en vain,* or *peut-être,* it is placed after the verb; as,

un maître qui le traite	*He serves a master who treats him*
aussi le veut-*il* quitter.	*badly;* also, he *wants to leave him.*
e irons-*nous.*	Perhaps we *shall go.*

EXCEPTION III.—Also, in narrations, the pronoun, as tive to the verb, is placed after it; as,

avez vu, lui dis-*je.*	*You have seen it, said* I *to him.*
us trompez, répondit-*il.*	*You are mistaken, answered* he.

EXCEPTION IV.—In the imperative affirmative (except in d person), the pronoun is placed after the verb (when *moi* instead of *me*, and *toi* instead of *te*); as,

ſénage-*toi.*	*Take care of* thyself.
)ites-*moi.*	*Tell* me.
)onnez-*nous.*	*Give* us.

eas, in the negative :—

ménage pas. Ne me dites pas. Ne nous donnez pas.

EXCEPTION V.—When the pronoun takes a preposition tself, it is placed after the verb; as,

l parle *de moi.*	*He speaks* of me.
e pense *à eux.*	*I think* of them.

When a verb governs two or more pronouns, they are n the following order :—

efore le, la, les;	le, la, les, before lui, leur;
,, le, la, les;	y, after any of the pre-
,, le, la, les;	ceding;
,, le, la, les;	en, always last.

EXAMPLES.

le donne.	*He gives it to me.*
le leur avez promis.	*You have promised it to them.*
vous y en enverrons.	*We shall send you some there.*
n trouvera.	*He will find some there.*

the imperative affirmative (except in the third person), *le s* is placed first; *nous* before *y*; and *y* before *moi*; as,

ez-le-moi.	*Give it to me.*
uisez-nous-y.	*Conduct us thither.*
yez-y-moi.	*Send me thither.*

When two imperatives (affirmative), are joined by *et* or second pronoun is generally placed before the verb; as,

mez-le *et le* lisez.	*Take it* and *read* it.

. When the pronoun *le* has reference to an adjective or to a tive used adjectively, it remains invariable. When this s, *so* or *it* is generally understood in English; as,

Madame, êtes-vous *malade ?*—	*Madame, are you ill ?*—
Oui, je LE suis.	*Yes, I am (so).*
Vous êtes *contents*, nous ne LE sommes pas.	*You are content, we are not (so).*

188. REMARK.—*Moi*, *toi*, when placed after the imperative, and followed by *en*, are changed into *m'*, *t'* ; as,

Donnez-m' en.	*Give me some.*
Va-t' en.	*Go away.*

III.—OF RELATIVE AND INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

189. *Relative* pronouns relate to a noun, a pronoun, or a phrase going before, which is called the *antecedent*. *Interrogative* pronouns are those used in asking a question. The Relative and Interrogative pronouns are :—

QUI	*who, which, that.*
QUE	*whom, which, that.*
QUOI	*what.*
LEQUEL	*which.*
DONT	*of whom, whose.*
OÙ	*in which.*
EN	*of him, of her, of it, from it, of them, some of it, some of them, any.*
Y	*to him, to her, to it, to them, in it, in them, therein.*

190. *Qui*, *que*, *quoi*, *dont*, *où*, *en*, *y*, are of both genders and numbers.

Of *QUI*, *QUE*, *QUOI*, *LEQUEL*.

QUI.

191.

qui	*who, which, that.*
de qui, dont	*of whom, of which, whose.*
à qui	*to whom.*
que	*whom, which, that.*

EXAMPLES.

La dame *qui* chante.	*The lady* who *sings.*
L' homme *de qui* je parle.	*The man* of whom *I speak.*
L' homme *à qui* je vais écrire.	*The man* to whom *I am going to write.*
Le garçon *que* je vois.	*The boy* whom *I see.*

REMARK.—*Qu'* is used instead of *que* before a vowel ; *qui never* changes ; as,

*Les livres qu'*il a lus.	The books which he has read.

LEQUEL.

192. *Lequel* is used with reference both to persons and to things, with which it agrees in gender and number.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.		
Masc.	*Fem.*	*Masc.*	*Fem.*	
lequel,	laquelle,	lesquels,	lesquelles,	*which.*
duquel,	de laquelle,	desquels,	desquelles,	*of which.*
auquel,	à laquelle,	auxquels,	auxquelles,	*to which.*

193. WHICH is translated by LEQUEL, LAQUELLE, LESQUELS, LESQUELLES,

1st. At the beginning of an interrogative sentence when speaking of a person or thing among several;

2nd. At the end of a sentence;

3rd. When it is preceded by a preposition; as,

Lequel de ces hommes?	Which *of these men?*
Lequel de ces jardins voulez-vous vendre?	Which *of these gardens do you wish to sell?*
Je ne sais *lequel.*	*I do not know* which.
Auquel avez-vous parlé?	To which one *have you spoken?*
La plume avec *laquelle* vous avez écrit.	*The pen with* which *you have written.*

194. WHO, WHICH, THAT, are translated by QUI when they are the nominative or subject of a verb; as,

Le garçon *qui* parle.	*The boy* who *speaks.*
Le livre *qui* est sur la table.	*The book* which *is on the table.*

195. WHOM, WHICH, THAT, are translated by QUE when they are the accusative or the direct object of a verb; as,

La dame *que* vous connaissez.	*The lady* whom *you know.*
Le livre *que* j' ai.	*The book* which *I have.*

196. WHOM is translated by QUI at the beginning of an interrogative sentence or between a verb and a pronoun; as,

Qui demandez-vous?	Whom *do you want (or ask)?*
Invitez *qui* vous voudrez.	*Invite* whom *you please.*

197. WHOM is translated by QUI when it is preceded by the preposition *to*; as,

Le médecin *à qui* elle s' adresse.	*The physician* to whom *she applies.*

198. WHAT is translated by *que* at the beginning of an interrogative sentence, or when it is placed between two verbs, the first of which is used negatively; as,

Que pensez-vous faire?	What *do you think* of doing?
Il ne sait plus *que* faire ni *que dire.*	*He knows* no longer what to do *or* what to say.

199. REMARK.—WHAT, at the beginning of an interrogative sentence, is translated by *quel, quels, quelle, quelles*, before the verb *être*, and also before a noun with which it must agree in gender and number; as,

Quel est l'homme assez hardi pour. . .	What *man is bold enough to.* . .
Quelle heure est-il?	What *o'clock is it?*

What is also translated by *quel, quels, quelle, quelles*, to mark uncertainty, doubt; as,

Il ne sait *quel* parti prendre, de *quel* côté tourner.	*He does not know* what *part to take, on* what *side to turn.*

QUOI.

200. QUOI, what, is used—

1st. When it is governed by a preposition.

2nd. When it stands at the beginning of an interrogative sentence, and is followed by an adjective in the comparative; as,

À *quoi* pensez-vous?	What *do you think of?*
Quoi de plus odieux que le mensonge?	What *is more odious than falsehood?*

Of *DONT*, *OÙ*, *EN* and *Y*.

DONT.

201. DONT, *whose, of whom, of which*, is used instead of *de qui, de quoi, duquel, de laquelle, desquels, desquelles*; as,

L' homme, *dont* le cheval s'est abattu.	*The man*, whose *horse has fallen.*
Le Nil, *dont* les eaux fertilisent l'Egypte.	*The Nile, the waters* of which *fertilize Egypt.*

202. REMARK.—At the beginning of an interrogative phrase, *whose* is translated by *à qui*, and *of whom*, by *de qui*; as,

À *qui* est cette maison?	Whose *house is this?*
De qui parlez-vous?	Of whom *do you speak?*

203. When *whose* can be changed into *of whom, of what person*, DE QUI must be used; as,

De qui êtes-vous fils?	Whose *son are you?*

OÙ.

204. OÙ, *in which, which*, is used instead of *lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles*, preceded by a preposition. It is only used in speaking of things; as,

La maison *où* (dans laquelle) je loge.	*The house* in which *I live.*
L'endroit d'*où* (duquel) vous venez.	*The place* from which *you come.*

EN.

205. EN, *of it, from it, of him, of her, of them,* is chiefly used in speaking of things and places, and but seldom in speaking of persons ; as,

Qu' *en* pensez-vous ?	*What do you think* of it ?
Venez-vous du jardin ?—Oui, j' *en* viens.	*Are you coming from the garden ?—Yes, I am* (*coming* from it).
Avez-vous parlé de Charles ?—Oui, nous avons dit tout le bien que nous *en* pensons.	*Have you spoken of Charles ?—Yes, we have said all the good* (*which*) *we think* of him.

206. *Some of it, some of them,* is translated by *en* ; also, *some* or *any,* when it is placed after a verb or at the end of a sentence.

EXAMPLES.

Vous n'avez pas de pain, je vous *en* donnerai.	*You have no bread, I will give you* some (of it).
Je vous remercie, j' *en* ai.	*I thank you, I have* some.
Donnez-m' *en.*	*Give me* some.

Y.

207. Y, *to it, to them, in it, in them, to him, to her,* is principally used in speaking of things, and only sometimes with reference to persons ; as,

Est-il au concert ?—Oui, il *y* est.	*Is he in the concert ?—Yes, he is there* (in it).
J' ai reçu sa lettre, j' *y* répondrai.	*I have received his letter. I shall answer* (to) *it.*
Je connais cet homme et je ne m' *y* fie pas.	*I know this man, and I do not trust* (to) *him.*
Pensez-vous à lui ?—J' *y* pense.	*Do you think of him ?—I do* (*think* of him).

208. *En* and *y* are always placed before the verb, except in the imperative *affirmative.*

PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE RELATIVE PRONOUN.

209. *The relative* pronouns *whom, that, which,* are often *omitted in English, but in French que* is always expressed ; as,

Les enfants *que* vous avez vus.	*The children you saw.*
La lettre *que* vous avez reçue hier.	*The letter (which) you received yesterday.*

210. The relative pronoun *qui* is always of the gender, number, and person of the noun or pronoun to which it relates; as,

Moi *qui* suis loué.	*I* (m.), who *am praised.*
Elle *qui* est louée.	*She*, who *is praised.*
Nous *qui* sommes loués.	*We* (m.), who *are praised.*
Elles *qui* sont louées.	*They*, who *are praised.*

211. When the relative requires to be separated from its antecedent, instead of dont, *duquel* or *de laquelle* is used in reference to things or animals, and either *de qui* or *duquel, de laquelle* in reference to persons; as,

Le cheval pour la selle *duquel* j'ai payé deux livres (sterling).	*The horse, for the saddle* of which *I have paid two pounds.*
L'ami, sur le secours *de qui* (ou *duquel*) vous comptez.	*The friend, on* whose *assistance you count.*

IV. OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

212. They are the following:—

ON	*one, people, we, they, it.*
QUICONQUE	*whoever, whosoever, any person.*
QUELQU' UN	*somebody, some one.*
CHACUN, *m.*, CHACUNE, *f.*	*every one, each one, each.*
AUTRUI	*others, other people.*
PERSONNE	*no person, no one, any person, any one, anybody.*
L' UN L' AUTRE L' UNE L' AUTRE LES UNS LES AUTRES LES UNES LES AUTRES	*one another, each other.*
L' UN ET L' AUTRE L' UNE ET L' AUTRE LES UNS ET LES AUTRES LES UNES ET LES AUTRES	*the one and the other, both.*

ON.

213. This pronoun is used when speaking in general terms, no particular person being designated. Its verb *is in the third* person singular, although it has generally a *plural meaning*; as,

Parle-t-*on* de cette nouvelle ?	*Do* they (*or* people) *speak of that news?*
On en parle.	They (people) *speak of it.*
On est heureux dès qu' *on* est content.	One *is* (people *are*, or we *are*) *happy as soon as* one *is* (they *are*, *or* we *are*) *content.*

214. After *et*, *si*, *où*, *que*, *qui*, and *quoi*, L with an apostrophe is placed before *on* for the sake of euphony; as,

Et L' *on* dit que. . .	*And it is said that.* . .
Si l' on nous entendait.	*If they (people) heard us.*
Quelqu' un que L' *on* connait bien.	*Some one who is well known.*

215. REMARK.—When, however, in the above case, *le*, *la*, *les*, *lui*, or *leur*, comes after *on*, it remains without *l'*; as, *et on le dit; si on l' entendait*, and not *et l' on le dit; si l' on l' entendait.*

Some begin a sentence with *L' on; On*, however, is preferable.

QUICONQUE.

216. This pronoun has no plural, and relates to persons only; it is generally masculine; when it evidently relates to a female, however, the adjective or past participle, which follows, is put in the feminine.

EXAMPLES.

Quiconque veut apprendre une langue, ne doit pas être timide.	Whoever *wishes to learn a language must not be timid.*
Mes filles, *quiconque* de vous me désobéira sera punie.	*Daughters*, whichever *of you will disobey me will be punished.*

QUELQU' UN.

217. This pronoun has gender and number; as,

Quelqu' un, *m.* Quelqu' une, *f.*	*somebody, some one.*
Quelques-uns, *m. pl.* Quelques-unes, *f. pl.*	*some, several out of a great number, any.*

EXAMPLES.

Quelqu' un m' a dit.	Somebody *told me.*
Quelqu' un de ces hommes.	Some one *of these men.*
Quelqu' une de ces filles.	Some one *of these girls.*
Je connais *quelques-uns* de ces messieurs.	*I know* some *of these gentlemen.*
J' ai parlé avec *quelques-unes* de ces dames.	*I have spoken with* some *of these ladies.*
Apportez-moi quelques-uns de vos livres.	*Bring me* some of your books.

CHACUN.

218. CHACUN, *m.*, *chacune*, *f.*, *every one*, *each*, has no plural.

EXAMPLES.

Chacun a ses défauts.	Every one *has his faults.*
Chacun de ces messieurs.	Each *of these gentlemen.*
Chacune de ces dames.	Each *of these ladies.*

AUTRUI.

219. AUTRUI, *others*, *other people*, is masculine, and has no plural. It is used in speaking of persons only, and is generally preceded by a preposition ; as,

Il remarque les défauts d' *autrui.*	*He observes the faults* of others.
Ne faites pas *à autrui* ce que vous ne voudriez pas qu' on vous fît.	*Do not* to others *what you would not wish others to do to you.*

PERSONNE.

220. PERSONNE, *no person*, *nobody*, *any person*, *anybody*, is masculine singular. It requires the negative *ne* before the verb when it means *nobody*, *no person*, *no one* ; as,

Personne ne vous comprend.	Nobody *understands you.*
Je *ne* vois *personne.*	*I see* no one.

221. *Personne* means *any person*, *anybody*, *any one*, in interrogative sentences and those which express doubt, and then the negative *ne* is not used ; as,

Personne a-t-il jamais parlé avec plus d' éloquence ?	*Has ever* anybody *spoken with more eloquence ?*
Nous doutons que *personne* l'ait surpassé.	*We doubt whether* anybody *has surpassed him.*

222. After *sans* and *sans que*, *ne* is also not required ; as,

Elle entra *sans que personne* la vît.	*She entered* without anybody *seeing her.*

223. *Personne* when a noun means a *person*, *people*, *a man*, or *a woman*, and is always feminine ; as,

C'est une *personne* très-distinguée.	*He or she is a very distinguished* person.

L'UN L'AUTRE.

224. L'UN L'AUTRE, m., L'UNE L'AUTRE, f., *one another*, is used with reference to two persons or things, and *les uns les autres*, *m.*, *les unes les autres*, *f.*, with reference to *more than two.*

If there be any preposition it is placed in the middle.

EXAMPLES.

Ils s'estiment *l'un l'autre.*	*They esteem* one another.
Ses sœurs et ses cousines se tourmentent *les unes les autres.*	*His sisters and cousins torment* one another.
Tous ces animaux vivent en paix *les uns avec les autres.*	*All these animals live in peace* with one another.
L'un ou l'autre viendra.	The one or the other *will come.*

L'UN ET L'AUTRE.

225. L'UN ET L'AUTRE, m., L'UNE ET L'AUTRE, f., LES UNS ET LES AUTRES, m. pl., LES UNES ET LES AUTRES, f. pl., *the one and the other, both,* is used as *l'un l'autre* ; as,

L'un et l'autre sont partis.	Both *have set out.*
Où sont vos sœurs et vos cousines ?—Je désire les voir *les unes et les autres.*	*Where are your sisters and your cousins ?—I wish to see them* all.
Je vous les enverrai, vous pouvez leur parler *aux unes et aux autres.*	*I shall send you them, you may speak to them* all.

226. NI L'UN NI L'AUTRE, *neither the one nor the other,* requires *ne* before the verb ; as,

Je *n'*ai vu *ni l'un ni l'autre.*	*I have seen* neither the one nor the other.

INDEFINITE PRONOMINAL ADJECTIVES.

227. The indefinite pronominal adjectives are :—

CHAQUE.	*Every, each.*
NUL, NULLE; AUCUN, AUCUNE; PAS UN, PAS UNE.	*None, no, no one, not one, not any.*
MÊME, MÊMES.	*Same, self, like, alike.*
PLUSIEURS.	*Several, many.*
TOUT, TOUTE.	*Every, each, any, any one.*
QUELCONQUE.	*Whatever, whatsoever.*
QUEL, QUELS, QUELLE, QUELLES.	*What.*
QUELQUE, QUELQUES.	*Some, whatever.*

CHAQUE.

228. CHAQUE, *every, each,* is of both genders, and has no plural ; it is always followed by a noun (and must therefore not be confounded with *chacun,* which stands alone) ; as,

Chaque âge a ses plaisirs.	Every age has its pleasures.
Chaque mal a son remède.	Every evil has its remedy.

NUL, AUCUN, PAS UN.

229. NUL, m., NULLE, f.; AUCUN, m., AUCUNE, f.; PAS UN, m., PAS UNE, f.; *none, no one, not one, not any*, have no plural. Each of these words requires the negative *ne* before the verb; as,

Nul homme *n'* est parfait.	No one *is perfect.*
Aucun de ces livres *ne* m' amuse.	None *of these books amuses me.*
On *n'*a reçu *aucune* nouvelle.	No *news* at all *has been received.*
Pas un ne le croit.	No one *believes it.*

MÊME.

230. MÊME, s., MÊMES, pl., *self, same, like, alike*, is of both genders; as,

C' est le *même* enfant, la *même* fille.	*It is the* same *child, the* same *girl.*
Moi-même, lui-même, nous-mêmes, eux-mêmes.	*Myself, himself, ourselves, themselves.*
Vos fautes et les siennes sont les *mêmes.*	*Your errors and his are alike.*

231. *Même*, when it means *even, also*, is an adverb, and is invariable; as,

Le jardin, la maison, les meubles *même*, furent mis à l'enchère.	*The garden, the house*, even *the furniture was put up for sale.*

PLUSIEURS.

232. PLUSIEURS, *several, many*, has no singular.

EXAMPLES.

Plusieurs de ces messieurs l'ont vu.	Several *of these gentlemen have seen it.*
Avez-vous un livre français?—J'en ai *plusieurs.*	*Have you a French book?—I have* several *of them.*

TOUT.

233. *Tout*, m., *toute*, f., when an indefinite pronominal adjective, means *every, each, any, any one*, and then never takes an article or pronoun, and has no plural; as,

Tout homme est sujet à la mort.	Every *man is subject to death.*
Toute espèce de gibier se trouve dans cette forêt.	Every *kind of game is found in this forest.*
A *tout* moment.	*At* any *moment.*

234. TOUT, when it means *all, whole*, is an adjective, and agrees in gender and number with the noun or pronoun to which it relates (*tout*, m., *toute*, f., *tous*, m. pl., *toutes, f. pl.*); as,

Toute l' Europe retentit de son nom.	The whole *of* (*or* all) *Europe resounds with his name*
Aimer Dieu de *tout* son cœur.	*To love God with* all *one's heart.*
Tout le monde ; *toute* la ville ; *tous* les enfants.	All *the world* ; the whole *town* ; all *the children.*
Tous deux, *m* ; *toutes* deux, *f* ; *tous* les deux, *m* ; *toutes* les deux, *f.*	Both.
Tous les six.	*The* whole *six.*

235. *Tout*, when it means *quite*, *entirely*, *however*, is an adverb. When it stands before an adjective or past participle masculine, or before an adjective or past participle feminine, beginning with a vowel or *h* mute, it does not change in gender or in number ; whereas, before an adjective or past participle feminine, beginning with a consonant or *h* aspirate, it is in agreement ; as,

Je suis *tout* à vous.	*I am* entirely *yours.*
Tout grand que vous êtes.	However *tall you are.*
Tout savants que sont ces messieurs.	However *learned these gentlemen are.*
Tout instruites que sont ces demoiselles.	However *well-instructed these young ladies are.*
Toutes savantes que sont ces demoiselles.	However *learned these young ladies are.*

236. *Tout*, when preceded by an article, is a substantive, meaning *the whole*, and is used in the masculine singular only ; as,

Prenez *le tout.*	*Take* the whole.
Le tout est plus grand qu' une de ses parties.	The whole *is larger than one of its parts.*

QUELCONQUE.

237. QUELCONQUE, *whatever*, *whosoever*, is always placed after a noun. When used with a negative it is invariable.

When used without a negative it varies in number.

EXAMPLES.

Il n'y a remède *quelconque.*	*There is no remedy* whatever.
Une idée *quelconque.*	*An idea* whatsoever.
Des objets *quelconques.*	*Any objects* whatsoever.

QUEL.

238. QUEL, m., QUELLE, f., QUELS, m. pl., QUELLES, f. pl., *what*, is used chiefly in interrogations and exclamations. It is always followed by a substantive, either expressed or understood, with which it agrees in gender *and number ; as,*

Quel homme ?	What *man* ?
Quelles femmes ?	What *women* ?
Quelle heure est-il ?	What *o'clock is it* ?
Quel malheur !	What *a misfortune* !
Quelle bonté !	What *a kindness* !

QUELQUE.

239. *Quelque*, s. ; *quelques*, pl., when used in the sense of *some*, *any*, is joined to a substantive and is of both genders ; as,

Il y a *quelque* temps.	*It is* some *time since.*
Il y a *quelques* années.	*It is* some *years since.*
Il vous en coûtera *quelques* francs.	*It will cost you* some *francs.*

240. *Quelque*, *whatever*, requires *que* after the noun which follows it, and the verb in the subjunctive mood ; as,

Quelques talents *que* vous ayez.	Whatever *talents you may have.*
Quelques richesses *que* vous possédiez.	Whatever *riches you may* possess.

241. When the noun which follows *quelque* is the subject or nominative, *qui* is used after it ; as,

Quelque chose *qui* arrive.	Whatever *may happen.*

242. QUELQUE, *whatever*, *whoever*, when followed by the verb *être*, is divided into two words (*quel que*), and then *quel* agrees in gender and number with the subject of the verb ; as,

Quelle que soit votre intention.	Whatever *your intention may be.*
Quels que soient ces messieurs.	Whoever *these gentlemen may be.*

243. QUELQUE, *however*, *howsoever*, followed by an adjective without a noun, or by an adverb, is itself an adverb, and is invariable. It requires *que* after the adjective or adverb, and the verb in the subjunctive ; as,

Quelque riche que vous soyez.	However *rich you may be.*
Quelque adroitement que la chose se soit faite.	However *skilfully the thing has been done.*

244. *Quelque* is also only an adverb when it is followed by a cardinal number : then it means *nearly*, *about*, *some*, and is invariable ; as,

Il y a quelque soixante ans.	It is about sixty years since.

PARTICULAR OBSERVATIONS ON THE INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

245. The pronoun ON, although generally conveying the idea of masculine singular, should be treated as feminine singular, when it is quite clear that a female is spoken of, and plural when the meaning clearly shows that it refers to several persons; as,

On n'est pas toujours *jeune* et *belle.*	*One is not always young and beautiful.*
Quand *on* est *belle*, on ne l'ignore pas.	*When people are beautiful they are not ignorant of it.*
On n'est point *des esclaves*, pour endurer de si mauvais traitements.	*We (people) are no slaves to endure such treatment.*

246. The English expressions, *it is said, it is believed*, etc., are translated by *on dit, on croit*, in which the passive verb in English is changed into an active verb in French.

ON is also used as the subject of an active verb when the passive voice is used in English.

EXAMPLES.

On m' appelle.	*I am called.*
On vous a dit.	*You have been told.*
On lui pardonnera.	*He will be pardoned.*

247. CHACUN, *each, every one*, is always singular; but when it is preceded by a plural it takes sometimes *son, sa, ses*, sometimes *leur, leurs*, after it. It takes *son, sa, ses*, when it is placed *after* the direct object, and *leur, leurs*, when it is placed *before* the direct object; as,

Ils ont reçu leurs récompenses, *chacun* selon *son* mérite.	*They have received their reward*, every one *according to* his *merit.*
Ils ont reçu *chacun leur* récompense.	*They have received* each their *recompense.*
Donnez-leur à *chacun leur* part.	*Give each one his part.*

CHAPTER V.

OF ADVERBS.

248. The word *Adverb* signifies *joined to a verb.* An *adverb* is a word which modifies a verb, an adjective, or another adverb, and is invariable.

EXAMPLES.

Ce garçon écrit *bien.*	*This boy writes* well.
Vous parlez *librement.*	*You speak* freely.
Il est *très*-adroit.	*He is* very *clever.*
Nous la voyons *très*-souvent.	*We see her* very *often.*

249. Most of the French adjectives become adverbs by adding *ment* (equivalent to *ly* in English), which is done according to the following rules :—

250. GENERAL RULE.—Adjectives ending with a vowel in the masculine, become adverbs by simply adding *ment;* as,

sage,	*wise.*	sagement,	*wisely.*
poli,	*polite.*	poliment,	*politely.*
ingénu,	*ingenuous.*	ingénument,	*ingenuously.*

251. The following take an acute accent over the *e* in which the adjective terminates :—

aveuglément,	*blindly.*	énormément,	*enormously.*
commodément,	*commodiously.*	opiniâtrément,	*obstinately.*
incommodément,	*incommodiously.*	uniformément,	*uniformly.*
conformément,	*conformably.*		

252. Adjectives ending with a consonant in the masculine, become adverbs by adding *ment* to their feminine ; as,

franc,	*frank.*	franchement,	*frankly.*
grand,	*great.*	grandement,	*greatly.*
heureux,	*happy.*	heureusement,	*happily.*
cruel,	*cruel.*	cruellement,	*cruelly.*

253. The following take an acute accent over the *e* belonging to the feminine termination of the adjective :—

communément,	*commonly.*	obscurément,	*obscurely.*
confusément,	*confusedly.*	précisément,	*precisely.*
diffusément,	*diffusely.*	profondément,	*profoundly.*
expressément,	*expressly.*	profusément,	*profusely.*
importunément,	*importunely.*		

254. Adjectives ending in *ant* or *ent* become adverbs by changing *nt* into *m* and adding *ment*; as,

constant,	*constant.*	constamment,	*constantly.*
éloquent,	*eloquent.*	éloquemment,	*eloquently.*

255. *Lent*, slow; *présent*, present; *véhément*, vehement, have *lentement*, slowly; *présentement*, presently; *véhémentement*, vehemently.

256. *Beau*, *nouveau*, *fou*, *mou*, become adverbs by adding *ment* to their feminine *belle*, *nouvelle*, *folle*, *molle*; as,

bellement,	*beautifully.*	follement,	*foolishly.*
nouvellement,	*newly.*	mollement,	*softly.*

257. *Gentil*, pretty, has *gentiment*, prettily, and *impuni*, unpunished, *impunément*.

OF THE DIFFERENT CLASSES OF ADVERBS.

258. Besides the adverbs formed from adjectives according to the preceding rules, there are many others which may be divided into the following classes :— Adverbs of *order* and *place*, *time*, *quantity*, *quality* and *manner*, *affirmation*, *negation*, *doubt*, *interrogation*, *comparison*.

We shall give a list of those adverbs of the different classes which are most in use.

ADVERBS OF ORDER AND PLACE.

259.

premièrement,	*first.*	ailleurs,	*elsewhere.*
secondement,	*secondly.*	ici,	*here.*
d'abord,	*at first.*	là, y,	*there.*
après,	*after.*	loin,	*far.*
auparavant,	*before.*	où,	*where.*
ensuite,	*afterwards.*	partout,	*everywhere.*
puis,	*then, next.*	près,	*near.*

ADVERBS OF TIME.

260.

PRESENT.

aujourd'hui,	*to-day.*	maintenant,	*now.*
à présent,	*at present.*	sur-le-champ,	*directly.*

PAST.

autrefois,	*formerly.*	avant-hier,	*the day before yesterday.*
dernièrement,	*lately.*	jadis,	*formerly.*
hier,	*yesterday.*	naguère,	*not long since.*

FUTURE.

bientôt,	*soon, very soon.*	désormais,	*hereafter.*
demain,	*to-morrow.*	le lendemain,	*the next day.*
après-demain,	*after to-morrow.*	sous peu, dans peu,	*shortly.*
dorénavant,	*henceforth.*	tantôt,	*by and by.*

INDETERMINATE.

alors,	*then.*	souvent,	*often.*
longtemps,	*long.*	toujours,	*always.*
rarement,	*seldom.*	quelquefois,	*sometimes.*

ADVERBS OF QUANTITY.

261.

assez,	*enough.*	guère, peu,	*little.*
beaucoup,	*much, many.*	tant,	*so much, so many.*
combien,	*how much, how many.*	trop,	*too much, too many.*
davantage,	*more.*		

ADVERBS OF QUALITY AND MANNER.

262.

bien,	*well.*	à l'aise,	*at ease.*
mal,	*badly.*	à la mode,	*fashionably.*
à la hâte,	*hastily.*	exprès,	*on purpose.*

ADVERBS OF AFFIRMATION.

263.

oui,	*yes.*	à la vérité,	*indeed.*
certes,	*certainly.*	volontiers,	*willingly.*
sans doute,	*undoubtedly.*	d'accord,	*agreed.*

ADVERBS OF NEGATION.

264.

non,	*no.*	ne jamais,	*never.*
ne pas, ne point,	*not.*	nullement,	*by no means.*
		point du tout,	*not at all.*

ADVERBS OF DOUBT.

265.

peut-être,	*perhaps.*	probablement,	*probably.*

ADVERBS OF INTERROGATION.

266.

comment,	*how.*	pourquoi,	*why.*
d'où,	*whence.*	quand,	*when.*

ADVERBS OF COMPARISON.

267.

ainsi,	*thus, so.*	pis,	*worse.*
aussi,	*also, as, too.*	plus,	*more.*
autant,	*as much, as many.*	plutôt,	*rather.*
comme,	*as, like.*	si,	*so.*
mieux,	*better.*	surtout,	*especially, above all.*
moins,	*less.*		

268. Most adverbs of manner, and some of the other classes, are compared in the same manner as adjectives.

The three following adverbs are irregular :—

POSITIVE.		COMPARATIVE.		SUPERLATIVE.	
bien,	*well.*	mieux,	*better.*	le mieux,	*the best.*
mal,	*badly.*	pis,	*worse.*	le pis,	*the worst.*
peu,	*little.*	moins,	*less.*	le moins,	*the least.*

PLACE OF ADVERBS.

269. Adverbs in French are usually placed after the verb in simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle in compound tenses ; as,

Vous faites *bien.*	*You do* well.
Il parle *souvent* de lui.	*He speaks* often *of him.*
Il a *souvent* parlé de lui.	*He has* often *spoken of him.*

270. Adverbs composed of two or three words are generally placed after the participle in compound tenses ; as,

On voit bien que cela a été fait *à la hâte.*	*It is well to be seen, that that has been done* hastily.

271. *Aujourd' hui*, to-day ; *demain*, to-morrow ; *hier*, yesterday, are sometimes placed before the verb and its subject, but never between the auxiliary and the participle ; as,

Hier il a plu.
Il a plu *hier.* } *It was raining* yesterday.

272. The adverbs *cependant*, meanwhile; *comment*, how; *combien*, how much; *quand*, when; *où*, where, and others, generally begin a sentence; as,

Comment vous portez-vous?	How *do you do?*
Quand partirez-vous?	When *will you set out?*

273. The following adverbs when placed before a noun require *de* after them:—

assez,	*enough.*	peu,	*little, few.*
autant,	*as much, as many.*	plus,	*more.*
beaucoup,	*much, many.*	rien,	*nothing.*
combien,	*how much, how many.*	tant,	*so much, so many.*
moins,	*less, fewer.*	trop,	*too much, too many.*
pas, point,	*no.* (*See* 33, *page* 8.)		

(*See Rule* 45, *and Remarks.*)

EXAMPLES.

Avez-vous *assez* D'argent?	*Have you money* enough?
Mon frère a *plus* DE livres que moi.	*My brother has* more *books than I.*

OBSERVATIONS ON SOME OF THE ADVERBS.

BEAUCOUP.

274. *Beaucoup*, much, many, is never preceded by *très*, very, *si*, so, *trop*, too, etc.; *so much, so many*, is rendered into French by *tant; too much, too many*, by *trop.*

BIEN.

275. *Bien* before another adverb or an adjective signifies *much, very, quite.* After an adverb it means *well*; as,

Il est *bien* malade.	*He is* very *ill.*
Il parle assez *bien.*	*He speaks* well *enough.*

COMME.

276. *Comme*, when it means, *as, like*, is used when *aussi, autant, si* or *tant*, does not go before, for in such cases *que* is preferred; as,

Comme vous savez.	As *you know.*
Il a autant d'argent *que* (not *comme*) vous.	*He has as much money* as *you.*

DAVANTAGE.

277. *Davantage, more*, is generally used at the end of a sentence. It can neither stand immediately before an adjective, *nor, like plus*, be followed by *de* or *que*; as,

Donnez m' en *davantage*.	*Give me some* more *of it.*
J' ai *plus* (not davantage) d'amis que vous.	*I have* more *friends than you.*

PLUS TÔT, PLUTÔT.

278. *Plutôt* means *rather*; whereas, *plus tôt* signifies *sooner* (time); as,

Plutôt mourir qu' être esclave.	Rather *die than be a slave.*
Vous devez partir *plus tôt*.	*You have to leave* sooner.

NE PAS, NE POINT.

Of *ne pas, ne point, ne rien*, etc., only the second negative, viz., *pas, point, rien*, is translated into English.

279. *Pas* and *point* are omitted, and only *ne* is used, after *que* preceded by the comparative adverbs *mieux, moins, plus, pire, autrement*, etc.; as,

Il est *plus* riche *que* vous NE pensez.	*He is richer than you think.*
L'affaire s' est passée *autrement que* vous NE croyez.	*The affair has happened otherwise than you think.*

280. *Pas* and *point* may be left out after the verbs *savoir*, to know; *pouvoir*, to be able; *oser*, to dare; and *cesser*, to cease, except when these verbs are employed to declare anything positively; as,

Je ne *saurais* vous dire.	*I cannot tell you.*
Je ne *puis* vous en répondre.	*I cannot vouch for it.*
On n' *ose* l' attaquer.	*They dare not attack him.*
Elle ne *cesse* de pleurer.	*She does not cease weeping.*
Vous ne savez *pas* votre devoir.	*You do not know your task.*
Vous n' osez *pas*.	*You dare not.*
Il ne cesse *pas* son jeu.	*He does not finish his play.*

281. *Pas* and *point* are left out, and only *ne* is used, after verbs denoting fear: as, *craindre, trembler*, to fear; *avoir peur*, to be afraid, &c., except when, in English, the verb which follows *to fear* is in the negative; as,

Je *crains* que vous *ne* l' oubliiez.	*I* fear *you may forget it.*
J' *ai peur* que cela *ne* vous fasse de la peine.	*I* am afraid *this may give you trouble.*
Je *crains* qu' il *ne* vienne pas.	*I* fear *he may* not *come.*

282. *Pas* and *point* are left out, and only *ne* is used, with a verb in the compound of the present, preceded by il y a or voilà, *denoting time, or by depuis que*; as,

Il y a deux ans que je *ne* l'ai vu.	*I have not seen him these two years.*
Voilà deux mois que je *ne* vous ai vu.	*It is two months since I saw you.*
Comment s'est porté monsieur votre père *depuis que* je *ne* l'ai vu ?	*How has your father been since I saw him?*

283. List of some words and expressions after which, when followed by *que*, *pas* and *point* are generally suppressed, and only *ne* is used :—

appréhender (as in 281).	*éviter.*
de crainte que (as in 281).	*inquiétude* (as in 281).
de peur que (as in 281).	*peu s'en faut.*
douter.	*prendre, avoir* or *se donner garde.*
empêcher.	

EXAMPLES.

De crainte qu'on *ne* vous trompe.	*For fear they might deceive you.*
Evitez qu'il *ne* vous parle.	*Avoid his speaking with you.*
Prenez garde qu'on *ne* vous trompe.	*Take care they do not deceive you.*

284. REMARK.—After QUE, why? *pas* or *point* is also suppressed ; as,

QUE *n'* attendez-vous ?	*Why do you not wait?*

285. *Ne* is used before the subjunctive, when the conjunction *que* stands after a negative sentence, in place of *à moins que* (after which *ne* also follows), *sans que, jusqu'à ce que* ; as,

Je ne retournerai chez vous *que* vous *ne* m' invitiez.	*I shall not come back to you* until *you invite me.*
Il ne fait point de voyage *qu'* il *ne* lui arrive quelque malheur.	*He makes no journey* without *some misfortune happening to him.*

286. REMARK.—Some verbs, when they have themselves the negative, require *ne* before the subjunctive in the sentence which follows. These are, *contester, désespérer, disconvenir, douter*, and *nier ;* as,

Vous ne sauriez *disconvenir* qu' il *ne* vous ait parlé.	*You can not disown that he has spoken to you.*
Je ne *nie* pas qu' il *n'* ait fait cela.	*I do not deny that he has done that.*

SEULEMENT, NE-QUE.

287. Instead of *seulement, only*, NE-QUE is very frequently used, whose real meaning is *not-but.*

EXAMPLES.

Il *n'* a *que* deux frères.	*He has* only *two brothers.*
Je *ne* connaissais *que* lui.	*I knew him* only.
Je ne veux *que* le voir.	I only want to see him.
Il ne fit que rire.	He did nothing but laugh.

NE-JAMAIS.

288. *Jamais, never* or *ever.* When *jamais* is accompanied by *ne* before the verb, it is translated *never*; when it means *ever* it is used without *ne.* When *jamais* stands quite alone it means *never.*

EXAMPLES.

Je *ne* l'ai *jamais* vu.	*I have* never *seen him.*
L'avez-vous *jamais* vu?—*Jamais.*	*Have you* ever *seen him?—Never.*

CHAPTER VI.

OF PREPOSITIONS.

289. *Prepositions* are so called from their being placed before the words they govern. They serve to show the relation which nouns or pronouns have to other words.

EXAMPLES.

Votre livre est *sur* la table.	*Your book is* on *the table.*
Je suis venu *avec* lui.	*I have come* with *him.*

Prepositions are either simple—as, *à*, to; *avec*, with; *dans*, in; *contre*, against—or compound; as, *à cause de*, on account of; *vis-à-vis de*, opposite.

290. Prepositions may be divided into three classes:—

1st. Prepositions which require no other preposition.

2nd. Prepositions which require *de.*

3rd. Prepositions which require *à.*

I.—PREPOSITIONS WHICH REQUIRE NO OTHER PREPOSITION.

291.

à,	*to, at.*	de dessus,	*from above.*
après,	*after.*	depuis,	*since.*
à travers,	*through.*	derrière,	*behind.*
avant,	*before.*	dès,	*from.*
avec,	*with.*	devant,	*before.*
chez,	*at, to.*	durant,	*during.*
concernant,	*concerning.,*	en,	*in.*
contre,	*against.*	entre,	*between.*
dans,	*in.*	envers,	*towards.*
de,	*of, from, with.*	excepté,	*except.*
de dessous,	*from under.*	hormis,	except, but.

malgré,	*in spite of.*	pendant,	*during.*
moyennant,	*by means of.*	pour,	*for.*
nonobstant,	*notwithstanding.*	sans,	*without.*
outre,	*besides.*	sauf,	*save, except.*
par,	*by, through.*	selon,	*according to.*
par deçà,	*on this side.*	sous,	*under.*
par delà,	*on the other side of.*	suivant,	*according to.*
par dessous,	*beneath.*	sur,	*upon.*
par dessus,	*above.*	touchant,	*concerning.*
parmi,	*among.*	vers,	*towards.*

II.—PREPOSITIONS WHICH REQUIRE *DE*.

292.

à cause de,	*on account of.*	au moyen de,	*by means of.*
à côté de,	*near, by.*	au niveau de,	*even to.*
à couvert de,	*secure from.*	auprès de,	*near.*
à fleur de,	*even with.*	autour de,	*around.*
à force de,	*by dint of.*	au travers de,	*through.*
à l'égard de,	*with respect to.*	en deçà de,	*on this side of.*
à l'exception de,	*excepted.*	en dépit de,	*in spite of.*
à l'insu de,	*unknown to.*	faute de,	*for want of.*
à moins de,	*unless.*	hors de,	*out of.*
au delà de,	*beyond.*	le long de,	*along.*
au dessous de,	*below.*	loin de,	*far from.*
au dessus de,	*above.*	près de,	*near.*
au devant de,	*before.*	proche de,	*near.*
au lieu de,	*instead.*	vis-à-vis de,	*opposite to.*

The last three may also be used without *de*.

III.—PREPOSITIONS WHICH REQUIRE *A*.

293.

jusqu' à, jusques à,	*as far as, till.*	par rapport à, quant à,	*with regard to.* *as for.*

THE PLACE OF PREPOSITIONS.

294. Prepositions in French are always placed before the noun or pronoun which they govern, and never after, as is sometimes done in English ; as,

A quoi pensez-vous?	*What are you thinking* of?
A qui parle-t-il?	*Whom does he speak* to?

295. The prepositions *de*, *en*, and *à*, are generally repeated before every noun, pronoun, or verb, whether repeated or not in English ; whereas, the other prepositions are repeated only when used before nouns or verbs of wholly different meanings ; as,

J' écris *à* votre frère et *à* votre sœur.	*I write* to *your brother and sister.*
Par la fermeté et *par* la patience.	By firmness and by patience.
Par l'orgueil et la hauteur.	By pride and haughtiness.

OBSERVATIONS ON SOME OF THE PREPOSITIONS.

À.

296. The preposition **à**, *to, at, in, with*, is used to express:

	EXAMPLES.
1st. *Direction to a place.*	Aller à Londres, *to go to London*; De Londres à Paris, *from London to Paris.*
2nd. *Time.*	À deux heures, *at Two o'clock.*
3rd. *Possession.*	Ce livre est à moi, *this book belongs to me.*
4th. *The place where something is, or happens.*	Il demeure à Paris, *he lives in Paris*; Il est à la campagne, *he is in the country.*
5th. *The instrument or matter employed to make something.*	Travailler à l'aiguille, *to work with the needle*; Bâtir à ciment, *to build with cement.*
6th. *The means.*	Peindre à l' aquarelle, *to paint in water colours.*
7th. *The cause, the destination, the use of something, &c.*	Un instrument à vent, *a wind instrument*; un moulin à eau, *a watermill*; un bateau à vapeur, *a steamer*; une salle à manger, *a dining-room*; une table à thé, *a tea table*; une tasse à café, *a coffee cup*; un verre à vin, *a wine glass.*

297. Additional examples of the various ways in which the preposition **à** is used.

S' habiller à la française.	*To dress after the French fashion.*
Un habit à la mode.	*A fashionable coat.*
Un chapeau à larges bords.	*A broad-brimmed hat.*
Une robe à raies bleues.	*A blue striped dress.*
Une robe à volants.	*A dress with flounces.*
Une voiture à quatre roues.	*A four-wheeled carriage.*
Une maison à trois étages.	*A three-story house.*
Des arbres à fruit.	*Fruit trees.*
Monter à cheval.	*To ride on horseback.*
Aller à droite, à gauche.	*To go to the right, to the left.*
Vendre à la livre.	*To sell by the pound.*
Recevoir à bras ouverts.	*To receive with open arms.*
Fermer à la clef.	*To lock up.*
Crier à haute voix.	*To cry out aloud.*
Aller pas à pas.	*To go step by step.*
Aller un à un, deux à deux.	*To go single, two and two.*

DE.

298. The preposition DE, *of*, *from*, *in*, *at*, etc., is used to express :—

1st. *Motion from one place to another.*	Venir de Paris,	*to come from Paris.*
	Il sort de l'église,	*he comes out of church.*
2nd. *The time.*	Je suis arrivé de nuit,	*I arrived by night.*
3rd. *The matter or substance a thing is made of.*	Une table d'acajou,	*a mahogany table.*
	Une montre d'or,	*a gold watch.*
4th. *Possession.*	Le livre de mon frère,	*my brother's book.*

299. Some additional examples of the various ways in which *de* is used.

Etre étonné *de* quelque chose.	*To be astonished at something.*
Parler *de* quelque chose.	*To speak of something.*
Pleurer *de* joie.	*To weep for joy.*
Il marche *d'*un pas ferme.	*He walks with a firm step.*
Travailler *de* ses mains.	*To work with one's hands.*
De cette manière.	*In this manner.*
Jamais *de* ma vie.	*Never in my life.*
Le valet *de* pied.	*The footman.*
Le maître *d'*hôtel.	*The hotel-keeper.*
La classe *de* latin.	*The Latin class.*
Le maître *d'* anglais.	*The English master.*
Une ville *de* commerce.	*A commercial town.*
Une maison *de* ville.	*A town-house.*
L'hôtel *de* ville.	*The town-hall.*
La femme *de* chambre.	*The chambermaid.*
Le constructeur *de* navires.	*The shipbuilder.*
Le livre *de* classe.	*The class book.*

DANS, EN.

300. The preposition DANS, *in*, *into*, is used in a determinate sense, and requires the article or the possessive or demonstrative adjective before the noun; as,

L'oiseau est *dans la* cage.	*The bird is* in the *cage.*
Il est *dans sa* chambre.	*He is* in his *room.*
Dans cette ville-ci il y a cinq mille habitants.	In this *town there are five thousand inhabitants.*

301. The preposition EN, *in*, *into*, is used in a much more vague and indeterminate sense, and is but seldom followed by the article; as,

Il est *en* bonne santé.	*He is* in *good health.*
J'ai confiance *en* vous.	*I have confidence* in *you.*

302. *Dans* is used in expressing the time when things are to be *done or to* take place, when in English after might be employed; *whereas en is* used in expressing the time spent in doing things; as,

Il viendra *dans* huit jours.	*He will come* in (after) *a week.*
Il a fait son voyage *en* huit jours.	*He has done his journey* in *a week.*
Vous me direz *dans* deux heures si vous avez achevé votre tâche.	*You will tell me* in *two hours whether you have finished your task.*
Il achèvera sa tâche *en* deux heures.	*He will finish his task* in *two hours.*

303. *En* is also used before names of countries and provinces, in the same way as *à* is used before the names of towns and villages; as,

Il est *en* France.	*He is* in *France.*
Il va *en* France.	*He is going* to *France.*
Il est *à* Paris.	*He is* in *Paris.*
Nous allons *à* Paris.	*We are going* to *Paris.*

304. *En* is also used to express the material of which a thing is made;

En quoi est cette table?—	*What is this table made of?*—
Elle est *en* acajou.	*It is made of mahogany.*
Où sont vos anneaux d'argent?—	*Where are your silver rings?*—
Je les ai échangés contre une bague *en* or.	*I have changed them for a gold ring.*

It will be observed that *en* is used to explain expressly what a thing is made of, whereas *de* is used simply to name the thing; as, *Où est la table* D' *acajou*? Where is the mahogany table? *C' est une table* EN *acajou.* This is a mahogany table.

305. The following examples will show how *en* is further used:—

En un mot.	*With one word.*
De jour *en* jour.	*From day to day.*
Il agit *en* père.	*He acts like a father.*
Il agit *en* bon chrétien.	*He acts like a good Christian.*
Il est *en* ville.	*He is in town (he has gone to another quarter of the town).*

Whereas,

Il est *dans* la ville.	*He is in the town.*
Il est *à* la ville.	*He is in the town. (He has gone from the country into the town.)*

CHEZ.

306. The following examples will show how CHEZ, *at, with,* &c., is used:—

Chez les Romains.	*With the Romans.*
Chez les Grecs.	*With the Greeks.*
Je serai *chez* moi.	*I will be at home.*
Sera-t-il *chez* lui?	*Will he be at home?*
Elle est *chez* elle.	*She is at home.*
Ils seront chez eux.	*They will be at home.*
Il est allé chez son tailleur.	*He has gone to his tailor.*

J'ai un *chez* moi.	*I have a home.*
Il a un *chez* lui.	*He has a home.*
Nous avons un *chez* nous.	*We have a home.*

DEVANT, AVANT.

307. DEVANT, *before*, is used with reference to *place*, and has also often the meaning of *in presence of*. *Avant* is used with reference to *time*, and serves also to mark priority of order and place; as,

Il est assis *devant* sa maison.	*He is sitting* before (in front of) *his house.*
Il paraîtra *devant* le tribunal.	*He will appear* before *the tribunal.*
Je suis rentré *avant* vous.	*I have come home* before (sooner than) *you.*
Il a mis ce chapitre *avant* l'autre.	*He has put this chapter* before *the other.*

CHAPTER VII.

THE CONJUNCTIONS.

308. *Conjunctions* are employed to join words and sentences. They are invariable.

EXAMPLES.

Comme il est inconstant dans ses projets, *aussi* voit-on *qu'* il réussit rarement en quelque chose.	As *he is inconstant in his projects, it is* also *seen* that *he seldom succeeds in anything.*
Il dit, *que si* vous partez, il vous suivra.	*He says*, that, if *you set out, he will follow you.*

Conjunctions are either *simple* or *compound*—as, *et*, and; *ou*, or; *car*, for; *cependant*, however; *de sorte que*, so that; *jusqu' à ce que*, till.

309. Conjunctions may be divided into five classes:—

1st. *Conjunctions which govern the Infinitive.*

2nd. *Conjunctions which govern the Subjunctive.*

3rd. *Conjunctions which govern the Indicative.*

4th. *Conjunctions which are followed sometimes by the Indicative, sometimes by the Subjunctive.*

5th. *Conjunctions which do not properly belong to any of the preceding classes.*

I.—CONJUNCTIONS WHICH GOVERN THE INFINITIVE.

310.

afin de,	*in order to.*	de crainte de, de peur de,	*for fear of.*
à moins de,	*unless.*	loin de,	*far from.*
au lieu de,	*instead of.*	plutôt que de,	*rather than.*
avant de,	*before.*		

II.—CONJUNCTIONS WHICH GOVERN THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

311.

afin que,	*in order that.*	jusqu'à ce que,	*till.*
à moins que,	*unless.*	non que,	*not that.*
au cas que,	*in case that.*	pourvu que,	*provided that.*
avant que,	*before.*	quoique,	*though.*
de crainte que, de peur que,	*for fear, lest.*	sans que,	*without.*
		soit que,	*whether.*
en cas que,	*in case that, if.*	supposé que,	*supposing that.*

III.—CONJUNCTIONS WHICH GOVERN THE INDICATIVE.

312.

à ce que,	*according to what.*	lorsque,	*when.*
ainsi que,	*as well as.*	parce que,	*because.*
à mesure que,	*in proportion as.*	pendant que,	*whilst.*
après que,	*after.*	peut-être que,	*perhaps.*
attendu que,	*considering that.*	puisque,	*since.*
au lieu que,	*whereas.*	tandis que,	*whilst.*
aussitôt que, dès que,	*as soon as.*	tant que,	*as long as.*
		vu que,	*seeing that.*

IV.—CONJUNCTIONS WHICH ARE SOMETIMES FOLLOWED BY THE INDICATIVE, SOMETIMES BY THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

313.

de sorte que,	*so that.*	si ce n'est que,	*except that.*
sinon que,	*unless.*		

314.

V. The Conjunctions most in use, and which cannot properly be placed in any of the preceding classes, are—

car,	*for.*	ni,	*nor.*
cependant,	*however.*	or,	*now.*
comme,	*as.*	ou,	*or.*
donc,	*then.*	quand,	*though, although.*
et,	*and.*	si,	*if.*
mais,	*but.*		

CHAPTER VIII.

THE INTERJECTIONS.

321. Interjections are words used to express sudden emotion.

322. The interjections most commonly used in French are :—

FOR JOY,	Ah ! bon !	*Ah ! well !*
FOR GRIEF and PAIN,	Ah ! aïe !	*Ah ! ay !*
	Hélas ! ouf !	*Alas !*
FOR FEAR,	Ah ! hé !	*Ah ! oh !*
FOR AVERSION,	Fi ! fi donc !	*Fie, fie ! fie !*
FOR DERISION,	Oh ! bah !	*Oh ! nonsense !*
	Zest !	*Pshaw !*
FOR SURPRISE,	Oh ! ha !	*Oh ! ha !*
	Vraiment !	*Indeed !*
FOR ADMIRATION,	Ah ! Oh !	*Ha ! oh !*
FOR ENCOURAGEMENT,	Ça ! oh ça !	*Now ! well ! come on !*
FOR WARNING,	Gare, holà !	*Take care ! hold !*
	Prenez garde !	*Take care !*
FOR CALLING,	Holà ! hé !	*Hollo ! eh ! ho !*
FOR SILENCING,	Chut ! st !	*Hush ! hist !*

OBSERVATIONS ON SOME OF THE CONJUNCTIONS.

QUE.

315. *Que* often replaces the conjunction once used in the same sentence; as,

Tandis que *Charles XII. donnait un roi à la Pologne soumise*, que *le Danemark n'osait le troubler*, que *le roi de Prusse recherchait son amitié*, et que *le roi Auguste se retirait dans ses états héréditaires* etc., *whilst* Charles XII. gave a king to subdued Poland, *whilst* Denmark did not venture to trouble him, *whilst* the king of Prussia sought his friendship, and *whilst* king Augustus retired to his hereditary states, etc.

S' il revenait et *qu'* il fît une réclamation, vous seriez fort embarrassé.

316. *Que* is often inserted in exclamations of the following kind:—

Quel homme *que* ce Fénelon!	*What a man was this Fénelon!*
La belle chose *que* l'espérance!	*What a fine thing is hope!*

317. *Que* is also used in the following manner:—

Je crois *que* oui.	*I believe so.*
J'espère *que* non.	*I hope not.*

ET—ET.

318. When *et* is repeated, the first *et* is translated *both*; as,

Et les richesses *et* la gloire s'évanouissent.	Both *riches and glory vanish.*

OU—OU.

319. *Ou, ou,* are translated *either, or*; as,

Ou vif *ou* mort.	Either *alive* or *dead.*

NI.

320. Ni, *neither, nor,* requires *ne* before the verb, if there be one in connection with it; as,

Je *n'* ai *ni* livres *ni* plumes.	*I have* neither *books* nor *pens.*
Il *ne* boit *ni ne* mange.	*He* neither drinks nor eats.
Ni moi non plus.	Nor *I, either.*

CHAPTER VIII.

THE INTERJECTIONS.

321. Interjections are words used to express sudden emotion.

322. The interjections most commonly used in French are :—

FOR JOY,	Ah ! bon !	*Ah ! well !*
FOR GRIEF and PAIN,	Ah ! aïe !	*Ah ! ay !*
	Hélas ! ouf !	*Alas !*
FOR FEAR,	Ah ! hé !	*Ah ! oh !*
FOR AVERSION,	Fi ! fi donc !	*Fie, fie ! fie !*
FOR DERISION,	Oh ! bah !	*Oh ! nonsense !*
	Zest !	*Pshaw !*
FOR SURPRISE,	Oh ! ha !	*Oh ! ha !*
	Vraiment !	*Indeed !*
FOR ADMIRATION,	Ah ! Oh !	*Ha ! oh !*
FOR ENCOURAGEMENT,	Ça ! oh ça !	*Now ! well ! come on !*
FOR WARNING,	Gare, holà !	*Take care ! hold !*
	Prenez garde !	*Take care !*
FOR CALLING,	Holà ! hé !	*Hollo ! eh ! ho !*
FOR SILENCING,	Chut ! st !	*Hush ! hist !*

PART II.

OF THE VERB.

323. Verbs are divided into five classes, viz. : *Active, Passive, Neuter, Reflective,* and *Impersonal.* AVOIR, *to have,* and ÊTRE, *to be,* are called Auxiliary verbs.

324. MOODS.—A verb has five moods : the INFINITIVE, the INDICATIVE, the CONDITIONAL, the IMPERATIVE, and the SUBJUNCTIVE, besides three *participles.*

325. TENSES.—The Tenses are formed by different terminations, or by means of the auxiliary verbs. They express time—present, past, or future.

326. Those formed by different terminations are called *simple tenses* ; those formed by means of the auxiliary verbs *(avoir, être)* are called *Compound.*

327.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB

AVOIR, to Have.

INFINITIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Infinitive Present.*
Avoir, *to have.*	Avoir eu, *to have had.*

PARTICIPLES.

Present.	*Compound of the Participle Present.*
Ayant, *having.*	Ayant eu, *having had.*

Participle Past.

Eu, *m.*, eue, *f.*, had.

INDICATIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
J' ai,	*I have.*	J' ai eu,	*I have had.*
Tu as,	*Thou hast.*	Tu as eu,	*Thou hast had.*
Il, *or* elle a,	*He*, or *she has.*	Il a eu,	*He has had.*
Nous avons,	*We have.*	Nous avons eu,	*We have had.*
Vous avez,	*You have.*	Vous avez eu,	*You have had.*
Ils, *or* elles ont,	*They have.*	Ils ont eu,	*They have had.*

Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
J' avais,	*I had.*	J' avais eu,	*I had had.*
Tu avais,	*Thou hadst.*	Tu avais eu,	*Thou hadst had.*
Il avait,	*He had.*	Il avait eu,	*He had had.*
Nous avions,	*We had.*	Nous avions eu,	*We had had.*
Vous aviez,	*You had.*	Vous aviez eu,	*You had had.*
Ils avaient,	*They had.*	Ils avaient eu,	*They had had.*

Perfect.		*Compound of the Perfect.*	
J' eus,	*I had.*	J' eus eu,	*I had had.*
Tu eus,	*Thou hadst.*	Tu eus eu,	*Thou hadst had.*
Il eut,	*He had.*	Il eut eu,	*He had had.*
Nous eûmes,	*We had.*	Nous eûmes eu,	*We had had.*
Vous eûtes,	*You had.*	Vous eûtes eu,	*You had had.*
Ils eurent,	*They had.*	Ils eurent eu,	*They had had.*

Future.		*Compound of the Future.*		
J' aurai,	*I shall have.*	J' aurai eu,	*I shall*	⎫
Tu auras,	*Thou shalt have.*	Tu auras eu,	*Thou shalt*	⎪
Il aura,	*He shall have.*	Il aura eu,	*He shall*	⎪ *have had.*
Nous aurons,	*We shall have.*	Nous aurons eu,	*We shall*	⎪
Vous aurez,	*You shall have.*	Vous aurez eu,	*You shall*	⎪
Ils auront,	*They shall have.*	Ils auront eu,	*They shall*	⎭

CONDITIONAL.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*		
J' aurais,	*I should have.*	J' aurais eu,	*I should*	⎫
Tu aurais,	*Thou shouldst have.*	Tu aurais eu,	*Thou shouldst*	⎪
Il aurait,	*He should have.*	Il aurait eu,	*He should*	⎪ *have had.*
Nous aurions,	*We should have.*	Nous aurions eu,	*We should*	⎪
Vous auriez,	*You should have.*	Vous auriez eu,	*You should*	⎪
Ils auraient,	*They should have.*	Ils auraient eu,	*They should*	⎭

IMPERATIVE.

Aie,	*Have (thou).*
Qu' il ait,	*Let him have.*
Ayons,	*Let us have.*
Ayez,	*Have (ye).*
Qu' ils aient,	*Let them have.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Que j' aie,	*That I may*	Que j' aie eu,	*That I may have had, etc.*
Que tu aies,	*That thou mayst*	Que tu aies eu,	
Qu' il ait,	*That he may*	Qu' il ait eu,	
Que nous ayons,	*That we may*	Que nous ayons eu,	
Que vous ayez,	*That you may*	Que vous ayez eu,	
Qu' ils aient,	*That they may*	Qu' ils aient eu,	

have.

Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
Que j' eusse,	*That I might*	Que j' eusse eu,	*That I might have had, etc.*
Que tu eusses,	*That thou mightst*	Que tu eusses eu,	
Qu' il eût,	*That he might*	Qu' il eût eu,	
Que nous eussions,	*That we might*	Que nous eussions eu,	
Que vous eussiez,	*That you might*	Que vous eussiez eu,	
Qu' ils eussent,	*That they might*	Qu' ils eussent eu,	

have.

328.

CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB

Être, to Be.

INFINITIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Infinitive Present.*	
Être,	*to be.*	Avoir été,	*to have been.*

PARTICIPLES.

Present.		*Compound of the Participle Present.*	
Etant,	*being.*	Ayant été,	*having been.*

Participle Past.

Eté, *been.*

INDICATIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Je suis,	*I am.*	J' ai été,	*I have been.*
Tu es,	*Thou art.*	Tu as été,	*Thou hast been.*
Il, *or* elle est,	*He, or she is.*	Il a été,	*He has been.*
Nous sommes,	*We are.*	Nous avons été,	*We have been.*
Vous êtes,	*You are.*	Vous avez été,	*You have been.*
Ils, *or* elles sont,	*They are.*	Ils ont été,	*They have been.*

Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
J' étais,	*I was.*	J' avais été,	*I had been.*
Tu étais,	*Thou wast.*	Tu avais été,	*Thou hadst been.*
Il était,	*He was.*	Il avait été,	*He had been.*
Nous étions,	*We were.*	Nous avions été,	*We had been.*
Vous étiez,	*You were.*	Vous aviez été,	*You had been.*
Ils étaient,	*They were.*	Ils avaient été,	*They had been.*

Perfect.		*Compound of the Perfect.*	
Je fus,	*I was.*	J' eus été,	*I had been.*
Tu fus,	*Thou wast.*	Tu eus été,	*Thou hadst been.*
Il fut,	*He was.*	Il eut été,	*He had been.*
Nous fûmes,	*We were.*	Nous eûmes été,	*We had been.*
Vous fûtes,	*You were.*	Vous eûtes été,	*You had been.*
Ils furent,	*They were.*	Ils eurent été,	*They had been.*

Future.		*Compound of the Future.*		
Je serai,	*I shall be.*	J' aurai été,	*I shall have*	been.
Tu seras,	*Thou shalt be.*	Tu auras été,	*Thou shalt have*	
Il sera,	*He shall be.*	Il aura été,	*He shall have*	
Nous serons,	*We shall be.*	Nous aurons été,	*We shall have*	
Vous serez,	*You shall be.*	Vous aurez été,	*You shall have*	
Ils seront,	*They shall be.*	Ils auront été,	*They shall have*	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*		
Je serais,	*I should be.*	J' aurais été,	*I should*	have been.
Tu serais,	*Thou shouldst be.*	Tu aurais été,	*Thou shouldst*	
Il serait,	*He should be.*	Il aurait été,	*He should*	
Nous serions,	*We should be.*	Nous aurions été,	*We should*	
Vous seriez,	*You should be.*	Vous auriez été,	*You should*	
Ils seraient,	*They should be.*	Ils auraient été,	*They should*	

IMPERATIVE.

Sois,	*Be (thou).*
Qu' il soit,	*Let him be.*
Soyons,	*Let us be.*
Soyez,	*Be (you).*
Qu' ils soient,	*Let them be.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*		
Que je sois,	*That I may*	Que j' aie été,	*That I may*	have been.
Que tu sois,	*That thou mayst*	Que tu aies été,	*That thou mayst*	
Qu' il soit,	*That he may*	Qu' il ait été,	*That he may*	
Que nous soyons,	*That we may*	Que nous ayons été,	*That we may*	
Que vous soyez,	*That you may*	Que vous ayez été,	*That you may*	
Qu' ils soient,	*That they may*	Qu' ils aient été,	*That they may*	

be.

Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
Que je fusse,	*That I might*	Que j' eusse été,	*That I might*
Que tu fusses,	*That thou mightst*	Que tu eusses été,	*That thou mightst*
Qu' il fût,	*That he might*	Qu' il eût été,	*That he might*
Que nous fussions,	*That we might*	Que nous eussions été,	*That we might*
Que vous fussiez,	*That you might*	Que vous eussiez été,	*That you might*
Qu' ils fussent,	*That they might*	Qu' ils eussent été,	*That they might*

329.

Avoir Conjugated (1) *Negatively.*		*Être Conjugated* (1) *Negatively.*	
Je n' ai pas,	*I have*	Je ne suis pas,	*I am*
Tu n' as pas,	*Thou hast*	Tu n' es pas,	*Thou art*
Il n' a pas,	*He has*	Il n' est pas,	*He is*
Nous n' avons pas,	*We have*	Nous ne sommes pas,	*We are*
Vous n' avez pas,	*You have*	Vous n' êtes pas,	*You are*
Ils n' ont pas,	*They have*	Ils ne sont pas,	*They are*
Je n' avais pas, &c.,	*I had not*, &c.	Je n' étais pas, &c.,	*I was not*, &c.
Je n' eus pas, &c. &c.,	*I had not*, &c. &c.	Je ne fus pas, &c. &c.,	*I was not*, &c. &c.
Je n' ai pas eu, &c. &c.,	*I have not had*, &c. &c.	Je n' ai pas été, &c. &c.,	*I have not been*, &c. &c.

330.

(2). *Interrogatively.*		(2.) *Interrogatively.*	
Ai-je?	*Have I?*	Suis-je?	*Am I?*
As-tu?	*Hast thou?*	Es-tu?	*Art thou?*
A-t-il?	*Has he?*	Est-il?	*Is he?*
Avons-nous?	*Have we?*	Sommes-nous?	*Are we?*
Avez-vous?	*Have you?*	Êtes-vous?	*Are you?*
Ont-ils?	*Have they?*	Sont-ils?	*Are they?*
Avais-je? &c., &c.	*Had I?* &c. &c.	Étais-je? &c., &c.	*Was I?* &c. &c.
Ai-je eu? &c., &c.	*Have I had?* &c. &c.	Ai-je été? &c., &c.	*Have I been?* &c. &c.

331.

(3.) *Negatively & Interrogatively.*			(3.) *Negatively & Interrogatively.*		
N'ai-je pas?	*Have I*	not?	Ne suis-je pas?	*Am I*	not?
N'as-tu pas?	*Hast thou*		N'es-tu pas?	*Art thou*	
N'a-t-il pas?	*Has he*		N'est-il pas?	*Is he*	
N'avons-nous pas?	*Have we*		Ne sommes-nous pas?	*Are we*	
N'avez-vous pas?	*Have you*		N'êtes-vous pas?	*Are you*	
N'ont-ils pas?	*Have they*		Ne sont-ils pas?	*Are they*	
N'avais-je pas? &c., *Had I not?* &c.			N'étais-je pas? &c., *Was I not?* &c.		
&c.	&c.		&c.	&c.	
N'ai-je pas eu? &c., *Have I not had?* &c.			N'ai-je pas été? &c., *Have I not been?* &c.		
&c.	&c.		&c.	&c.	

OF REGULAR VERBS.

PRELIMINARY OBSERVATIONS.

332. There are four conjugations, which are distinguished by the termination of the present of the infinitive.

Verbs of the first conjugation end in ER; as, parler, *to speak.*
" second " " IR; as, finir, *to finish.*
" third " " OIR; as, recevoir, *to receive.*
" fourth " " RE; as, vendre, *to sell.*

333. There are in each of these conjugations *regular*, *irregular*, and *defective* verbs.

334. A verb is *regular* when all its tenses take the same terminations as any one of the four model conjugations given below.

335. A verb is *irregular* when any of its tenses or any persons of its tenses take terminations different from those of the conjugation to which it belongs.

336. A verb is *defective* when it is not used in some of its tenses or persons.

REMARK.—The terminations vary according to tenses and persons.

The learning of the conjugations may be very much facilitated by observing how the different tenses are formed from the primitive.

337. The *primitive tenses* which serve to form all the others are :—

1. THE PRESENT OF THE INFINITIVE.
2. THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.
3. THE PARTICIPLE PAST.
4. THE PRESENT OF THE INDICATIVE.
5. THE PERFECT OF THE INDICATIVE.

Before giving the four model conjugations of the regular verbs, we shall give :—

1st. *A table comparing the general terminations of the tenses of verbs.*

2nd. *A table shewing the formation of the tenses.*

TABLE I.

COMPARISON OF THE GENERAL TERMINATIONS OF THE TENSES OF VERBS.

	1st Conj.	2nd Conj.	3rd Conj.	4th Conj.
INFINITIVE PRESENT,	er	ir	oir	re
PARTICIPLE PRESENT,	ant	ant	ant	ant
PARTICIPLE PAST,	é	i	u	u

INDICATIVE.

	PRESENT.				IMPERFECT.	PERFECT.				FUTURE.
Pers.	1st Conj.	2nd Conj.	3rd Conj.	4th Conj.	For all four Conj.	1st Conj.	2nd Conj.	3rd Conj.	4th Conj.	For all four Conj.
Sing.										
1st.	e	s	s	s	ais	ai	is	us	is	rai
2nd.	es	s	s	s	ais	as	is	us	is	ras
3rd.	e	t	t	—	ait	a	it	ut	it	ra
Plur.										
1st.	ons	ons	ons	ons	ions	âmes	îmes	ûmes	îmes	rons
2nd.	ez	ez	ez	ez	iez	âtes	îtes	ûtes	îtes	rez
3rd.	ent	ent	ent	ent	aient	èrent	irent	urent	irent	ront

	CONDITIONAL.	IMPERATIVE.		SUBJUNCTIVE.				
	PRESENT.			PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.			
	For all four Conj.	1st Conj.	2nd 3rd and 4th Conj.	For all four Conj.	1st Conj.	2nd Conj.	3rd Conj.	4th Conj.
Sing.								
1st.	rais	—	—	e	*asse*	*isse*	*usse*	*isse*
2nd.	rais	e	s	es	*asses*	*isses*	*usses*	*isses*
3rd.	rait	e	e	e	ât	ît	ût	ît
Plur.								
1st.	rions	ons	ons	ions	*assions*	*issions*	*ussions*	*issions*

SHEWING THE FORMATION

A.—PRIMITIVE

I.—PRESENT OF THE INFINITIVE *	II.—PARTICIPLE
1. Conj.—Parler *(to speak).*	Parlant.
2. Conj.—Finir *(to finish).*	Finissant.
3. Conj.—Recevoir *(to receive).*	Recevant.
4. Conj.—Vendre *(to sell).*	Vendant.

B.—DERIVATIVE

1. Future.	2. Conditional.	1. Present of the Ind.	2. Imperfect of the Ind.
		Plural.	
Je parler*ai*	Je parler*ais*		Je parl*ais*
tu parler*as*	tu parler*ais*		tu parl*ais*
il parler*a*	il parler*ait*		il parl*ait*
nous parler*ons*	nous parler*ions*	nous parl*ons*	nous parl*ions*
vous parler*ez*	vous parler*iez*	vous parl*ez*	vous parl*iez*
ils parler*ont*	ils parler*aient*	ils parl*ent*	ils parl*aient*
Je fini*rai*	Je fini*rais*		Je finis*sais*
tu fini*ras*	tu fini*rais*		tu finis*sais*
il fini*ra*	il fini*rait*		il finis*sait*
nous fini*rons*	nous fini*rions*	nous finis*sons*	nous finis*sions*
vous fini*rez*	vous fini*riez*	vous finis*sez*	vous finis*siez*
ils fini*ront*	ils fini*raient*	ils finis*sent*	ils finis*saient*
Je recev*rai*	Je recev*rais*		Je recev*ais*
tu recev*ras*	tu recev*rais*		tu recev*ais*
il recev*ra*	il recev*rait*		il recev*ait*
nous recev*rons*	nous recev*rions*	‡nous recev*ons*	nous recev*ions*
vous recev*rez*	vous recev*riez*	vous recev*ez*	vous recev*iez*
ils recev*ront*	ils recev*raient*	ils reçoiv*ent*	ils recev*aient*
Je vend*rai*	Je vend*rais*		Je vend*ais*
tu vend*ras*	tu vend*rais*		tu vend*ais*
il vend*ra*	il vend*rait*		il vend*ait*
nous vend*rons*	nous vend*rions*	nous vend*ons*	nous vend*ions*
vous vend*rez*	vous vend*riez*	vous vend*ez*	vous vend*iez*
ils vend*ront*	ils vend*raient*	ils vend*ent*	ils vend*aient*

* From the *Present of the Infinitive* are formed the *Future*, by changing *r*, *oir*, or *re* into *rai*; the *Conditional*, by changing *r*, *oir*, or *re* into *rais*.

† From the *Participle of the Present* are formed the derivative tenses and persons given above, by dropping the *ant* and adding the different terminations according to the preceding table.

THE TENSES.

SES.

ENT.†	III. PART. PAST.	IV.—PRES. IND. *(Sing.)*§	V.–PERFECT OF THE IND.‖
	PARLÉ. FINI. REÇU. VENDU.	PARLE. FINIS. REÇOIS. VENDS.	PARLAI. FINIS. REÇUS. VENDIS.

SES.

ERATIVE, son Sing. Plural.	4. PRESENT OF THE SUB.	ALL COMPOUND TENSES.	IMPERATIVE, *2nd Person Singular.*	IMPERFECT OF THE SUB.
	que je parle que tu parles qu' il parle que nous parlions que vous parliez qu' ils parlent	J' ai parlé, fini, reçu, vendu. J' avais parlé, fini, reçu, vendu. J'eus parlé, fini, reçu, vendu. &c.	parle	Que je parlasse, parlasses, parlât, parlassions, parlassiez, parlassent.
	que je finisse que tu finisses qu' il finisse que nous finissions que vous finissiez qu' ils finissent		finis	Que je finisse, finisses, finît, finissions, finissiez, finissent.
	‡que je reçoive que tu reçoives qu' il reçoive que nous recevions que vous receviez qu' ils reçoivent		reçois	Que je reçusse, reçusses, reçût, reçussions, reçussiez, reçussent.
	que je vende que tu vendes qu' il vende que nous vendions que vous vendiez qu' ils vendent		vends	Que je vendisse, vendisses, vendît, vendissions, vendissiez, vendissent.

s of the 3rd Conjugation n the plural of the *Ind.* the *Imperative*, and in the s., the *e* preceding the *v* except in the 1*st* and 2*nd Plural.*

§The 2nd Person Sing. of the Imperat. is the same as the 1st Pers. Sing. of the Ind. Pres.

‖ *Se* is added to the *Perf. Ind.* to form the *Imp. Sub.* In the 1st Conj. *se* is added to the 2nd Pers. Sing. Perf. Ind.

I. CONJUGATION OF ACTIVE VERBS.

338.

FIRST CONJUGATION in ER.

PARLER, to speak.

INFINITIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Parler, *to speak.*	Avoir parlé, *to have spoken.*
Participle Present.	*Compound of the Participle Present.*
Parlant, *speaking.*	Ayant parlé, *having spoken.*

Participle Past.—Parlé, *spoken.*

(*Primitive Tenses:*—Parler, Parlant, Parlé, Parle, Parlai.)

SIMPLE TENSES.

INDICATIVE.

Present.		*Imperfect.*		
Je parle,	*I speak, am speaking, do speak.*	Je parlais,	*I was*	speaking.
Tu parles,	*Thou speakest.*	Tu parlais,	*Thou wast*	
Il parle,	*He speaks.*	Il parlait,	*He was*	
Nous parlons,	*We speak.*	Nous parlions,	*We were*	
Vous parlez,	*You speak.*	Vous parliez,	*You were*	
Ils parlent,	*They speak.*	Ils parlaient,	*They were*	

Perfect.		*Future.*		
Je parlai,	*I spoke.*	Je parlerai,	*I shall*	speak.
Tu parlas,	*Thou spokest.*	Tu parleras,	*Thou shalt*	
Il parla,	*He spoke.*	Il parlera,	*He shall*	
Nous parlâmes,	*We spoke.*	Nous parlerons,	*We shall*	
Vous parlâtes,	*You spoke.*	Vous parlerez,	*You shall*	
Ils parlèrent,	*They spoke.*	Ils parleront,	*They shall*	

Conditional Present.		*Imperative.*	
Je parlerais,	*I should*		
Tu parlerais,	*Thou shouldst* speak.	Parle,*	*Speak (thou).*
Il parlerait,	*He should*	Qu'il parle,	*Let him speak.*
Nous parlerions,	*We should*	Parlons,	*Let us speak.*
Vous parleriez,	*You should*	Parlez,	*Speak (you).*
Ils parleraient,	*They should*	Qu'ils parlent,	*Let them speak.*

*The second person singular of the imperative takes an *s* when *it is followed* by *en* or *y*; as, *parles-en*, speak of it; *penses-y*, *think of it.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		*Imperfect.*	
Que je parle,	That I may speak, &c.	Que je parlasse,	That I might speak, &c.
Que tu parles,		Que tu parlasses,	
Qu'il parle,		Qu'il parlât,	
Que nous parlions,		Que nous parlassions,	
Que vous parliez,		Que vous parlassiez,	
Qu'ils parlent,		Qu'ils parlassent,	

COMPOUND TENSES.

INDICATIVE.

Compound of the Present, or Preterite Indefinite.		*Compound of the Imperfect, or Pluperfect.*	
J' ai parlé,	I have spoken, &c.	J' avais parlé,	I had spoken, &c.
Tu as parlé,		Tu avais parlé,	
Il a parlé,		Il avait parlé,	
Nous avons parlé,		Nous avions parlé,	
Vous avez parlé,		Vous aviez parlé,	
Ils ont parlé,		Ils avaient parlé,	

Compound of the Perfect, or Preterite Anterior.		*Compound of the Future, or Future Anterior.*	
J' eus parlé,	I had spoken, &c.	J' aurai parlé,	I shall have spoken, &c.
Tu eus parlé,		Tu auras parlé,	
Il eut parlé,		Il aura parlé,	
Nous eûmes parlé,		Nous aurons parlé,	
Vous eûtes parlé,		Vous aurez parlé,	
Ils eurent parlé,		Ils auront parlé,	

Compound of the Conditional, or Conditional Past.

J' aurais parlé, *or* J' eusse parlé,
Tu aurais parlé, *or* Tu eusses parlé,
Il aurait parlé, *or* Il eût parlé,
Nous aurions parlé, *or* Nous eussions parlé,
Vous auriez parlé, *or* Vous eussiez parlé,
Ils auraient parlé, *or* Ils eussent parlé,

I should, would, &c., have spoken.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Compound of the Present, or Preterite.		*Compound of the Imperfect, or Pluperfect.*	
Que j' aie parlé,	That I may have spoken, &c.	Que j' eusse parlé,	That I might have spoken, &c.
Que tu aies parlé,		Que tu eusses parlé,	
Qu' il ait parlé,		Qu' il eût parlé,	
Que nous ayons parlé,		Que nous eussions parlé,	
Que vous ayez parlé,		Que vous eussiez parlé,	
Qu' ils aient parlé,		Qu' ils eussent parlé,	

339. Conjugate in the same manner all the regular verbs ending in *er*; as,

Chanter,	*To sing.*	Fermer,	To shut.
Danser,	*To dance.*	Montrer,	To show.
Donner,	*To give.*	Porter,	To carry.

SECOND CONJUGATION in IR.

340. *FINIR, to Finish.*

INFINITIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*
Finir,	*To finish.*	Avoir fini, *To have finished.*

Participle Present.		*Compound of the Participle Present.*
Finissant,	*Finishing.*	Ayant fini, *Having finished.*

Participle Past.—Fini, *finished.*

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Finir, Finissant, Fini, Finis, Finis.)

INDICATIVE.

Present.		*Imperfect.*		
Je finis,	*I finish.*	Je finissais,	*I was*	—finishing.
Tu finis,	*Thou finishest.*	Tu finissais,	*Thou wast*	
Il finit,	*He finishes.*	Il finissait,	*He was*	
Nous finissons,	*We finish.*	Nous finissions,	*We were*	
Vous finissez,	*You finish.*	Vous finissiez,	*You were*	
Ils finissent,	*They finish.*	Ils finissaient,	*They were*	

Perfect.		*Future.*		
Je finis,	*I finished.*	Je finirai,	*I shall*	—finish.
Tu finis,	*Thou finishedst.*	Tu finiras,	*Thou shalt*	
Il finit,	*He finished.*	Il finira,	*He shall*	
Nous finîmes,	*We finished.*	Nous finirons,	*We shall*	
Vous finîtes,	*You finished.*	Vous finirez,	*You shall*	
Ils finirent,	*They finished.*	Ils finiront,	*They shall*	

Conditional Present.		*Imperative.*	
Je finirais,	*I should* —finish.		
Tu finirais,	*Thou shouldst*	Finis,	*Finish (thou).*
Il finirait,	*He should*	Qu' il finisse,	*Let him finish.*
Nous finirions,	*We should*	Finissons,	*Let us finish.*
Vous finiriez,	*You should*	Finissez,	*Finish (you).*
Ils finiraient,	*They should*	Qu' ils finissent,	*Let them finish.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		*Imperfect.*	
Que je finisse,	—That I may finish, &c.	Que je finisse,	—That I might finish, &c.
Que tu finisses,		Que tu finisses,	
Qu' il finisse,		Qu' il finît,	
Que nous finissions,		Que nous finissions,	
Que vous finissiez,		Que vous finissiez,	
Qu' ils finissent,		Qu' ils finissent,	

COMPOUND TENSES.

J' ai, j' avais, j' eus, j' aurai, *j'aurais*, que j'aie, que j' eusse *fini.*	*I have, I had, I had, I shall have, I should have, that I may have,* that I might have finished.

341. Conjugate in the same manner all the regular verbs ending in *ir*; as,

Agir,	*To act.*	Fournir,	*To furnish.*
Bâtir,	*To build.*	Obéir,	*To obey.*
Fléchir,	*To soften.*	Punir,	*To punish.*

THIRD CONJUGATION in OIR.

342.

RECEVOIR, to Receive.

INFINITIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Recevoir,	*To receive.*	Avoir reçu,	*To have received.*

Participle Present.		*Compound of the Participle Present.*	
Recevant,	*Receiving.*	Ayant reçu,	*Having received.*

Participle Past.—Reçu, *Received.*

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Recevoir, Recevant, Reçu, Reçois, Reçus.)

INDICATIVE.

Present.		*Imperfect.*		
Je reçois,	*I receive.*	Je recevais,	*I was*	receiving.
Tu reçois,	*Thou receivest.*	Tu recevais,	*Thou wast*	
Il reçoit,	*He receives.*	Il recevait,	*He was*	
Nous recevons,	*We receive.*	Nous recevions,	*We were*	
Vous recevez,	*You receive.*	Vous receviez,	*You were*	
Ils reçoivent,	*They receive.*	Ils recevaient,	*They were*	

Perfect.		*Future.*		
Je reçus,	*I received.*	Je recevrai,	*I shall*	receive.
Tu reçus,	*Thou receivedst.*	Tu recevras,	*Thou shalt*	
Il reçut,	*He received.*	Il recevra,	*He shall*	
Nous reçûmes,	*We received.*	Nous recevrons,	*We shall*	
Vous reçûtes,	*You received.*	Vous recevrez,	*You shall*	
Ils reçurent,	*They received.*	Ils recevront,	*They shall*	

Conditional Present.			*Imperative.*	
Je recevrais,	*I should*	receive.		
Tu recevrais,	*Thou shouldst*		Reçois,	*Receive (thou).*
Il recevrait,	*He should*		Qu'il reçoive,	*Let him receive.*
Nous recevrions,	*We should*		Recevons,	*Let us receive.*
Vous recevriez,	*You should*		Recevez,	Receive (you).
Ils recevraient,	*They should*		Qu'ils reçoivent,	Let them receive.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		*Imperfect.*	
Que je reçoive,	*That I may receive, &c.*	Que je reçusse,	*That I might receive, &c.*
Que tu reçoives,		Que tu reçusses,	
Qu'il reçoive,		Qu'il reçût,	
Que nous recevions,		Que nous reçussions,	
Que vous receviez,		Que vous reçussiez,	
Qu'ils reçoivent,		Qu'ils reçussent,	

COMPOUND TENSES.

J' ai, j' avais, j' eus, j' aurai, j' aurais, que j' aie, que j' eusse reçu.	*I have, I had, I had, I shall have, I should have, that I may have, that I might have received.*

343. Conjugate in the same manner the following six verbs :—

Apercevoir,	*To perceive.*	Redevoir,	*To owe still.*
Concevoir,	*To conceive.*	Percevoir,	*To collect (rents, taxes).*
Décevoir,	*To deceive.*		
Devoir,	*To owe.*		

FOURTH CONJUGATION in RE.

344.

VENDRE, to Sell.

INFINITIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Vendre,	*To sell.*	Avoir vendu,	*To have sold.*

Participle Present.		*Compound of the Participle Present.*	
Vendant,	*Selling.*	Ayant vendu,	*Having sold.*

Participle Past.—Vendu, sold.

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Vendre, Vendant, Vendu, Vends, Vendis.)

INDICATIVE.

Present.		*Imperfect.*		
Je vends,	*I sell.*	Je vendais,	*I was*	*selling.*
Tu vends,	*Thou sellest.*	Tu vendais,	*Thou wast*	
Il vend,	*He sells.*	Il vendait,	*He was*	
Nous vendons,	*We sell.*	Nous vendions,	*We were*	
Vous vendez,	*You sell.*	Vous vendiez,	*You were*	
Ils vendent,	*They sell.*	Ils vendaient,	*They were*	

Perfect.		*Future.*		
Je vendis,	*I sold.*	Je vendrai,	*I shall*	sell.
Tu vendis,	*Thou soldest.*	Tu vendras,	*Thou shalt*	
Il vendit,	*He sold.*	Il vendra,	*He shall*	
Nous vendîmes,	*We sold.*	Nous vendrons,	*We shall*	
Vous vendîtes,	*You sold.*	Vous vendrez,	*You shall*	
Ils vendirent,	*They sold.*	Ils vendront,	*They shall*	

Conditional Present.		*Imperative.*	
Je vendrais,	*I should*		
Tu vendrais,	*Thou shouldst*	Vends,	*Sell (thou).*
Il vendrait,	*He should*	Qu' il vende,	*Let him sell.*
Nous vendrions,	*We should*	Vendons,	*Let us sell.*
Vous vendriez,	*You should*	Vendez,	*Sell (you).*
Ils vendraient,	*They should*	Qu'ils vendent,	*Let them sell.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		*Imperfect.*	
Que je vende,	That I might sell, &c.	Que je vendisse,	That I might sell, &c.
Que tu vendes,		Que tu vendisses,	
Qu' il vende,		Qu' il vendit,	
Que nous vendions,		Que nous vendissions,	
Que vous vendiez,		Que vous vendissiez,	
Qu' ils vendent,		Qu' ils vendissent,	

COMPOUND TENSES.

J' ai, j' avais, j' eus, j' aurai, j' aurais, que j' aie, que j' eusse vendu.	*I have, I had, I had, I shall have, I should have, that I may have, that I might have sold.*

345. Conjugate in the same manner all the regular verbs ending in *re*; as,

Défendre,	*To defend.*	Perdre,	*To lose.*
Fendre,	*To split.*	Rendre,	*To give back.*
Fondre,	*To melt.*	Répondre,	*To answer.*

VERBS CONJUGATED NEGATIVELY.

346. It has already been shown, under *avoir* and *être*, that *ne*, in simple tenses, is placed before the verb, and *pas* or *point* after it. In compound tenses, the *auxiliary* is preceded by *ne*, and followed by *pas* or *point*. In the Infinitive present, both negatives are generally put before the verb. This rule applies also to other negatives; such as,

NE . . . PLUS, *no more, no longer*; NE . . . RIEN, nothing.
NE . . . JAMAIS, *never.*

EXAMPLE OF A VERB CONJUGATED NEGATIVELY.

347. *NE PAS PARLER, not to Speak.*

INFINITIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Ne pas parler, *not to speak.*	N' avoir pas parlé, *not to have spoken.*

Participle Present.	*Compound of the Participle Present.*
Ne parlant pas, *not speaking.*	N' ayant pas parlé, *not having spoken.*

INDICATIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.		COMPOUND TENSES.	
Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Je ne parle pas,		Je n' ai pas parlé,	
Tu ne parles pas,		Tu n' as pas parlé,	
Il ne parle pas,	*I do not speak, &c.*	Il n' a pas parlé,	*I have not spoken, &c.*
Nous ne parlons pas,		Nous n' avons pas parlé,	
Vous ne parlez pas,		Vous n' avez pas parlé,	
Ils ne parlent pas,		Ils n' ont pas parlé,	
Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
Je ne parlais pas,		Je n' avais pas parlé,	
Tu ne parlais pas,		Tu n' avais pas parlé,	
Il ne parlait pas,	*I was not speaking, &c.*	Il n' avait pas parlé,	*I had not spoken, &c.*
Nous ne parlions pas,		Nous n' avions pas parlé,	
Vous ne parliez pas,		Vous n' aviez pas parlé,	
Ils ne parlaient pas,		Ils n' avaient pas parlé,	
Perfect.		*Compound of the Perfect.*	
Je ne parlai pas,		Je n' eus pas parlé,	
Tu ne parlas pas,		Tu n' eus pas parlé,	
Il ne parla pas,	*I did not speak, &c.*	Il n' eut pas parlé,	*I had not spoken, &c.*
Nous ne parlâmes pas,		Nous n' eûmes pas parlé,	
Vous ne parlâtes pas,		Vous n' eûtes pas parlé,	
Ils ne parlèrent pas,		Ils n' eurent pas parlé,	
Future.		*Compound of the Future.*	
Je ne parlerai pas,		Je n' aurai pas parlé,	
Tu ne parleras pas,		Tu n' auras pas parlé,	
Il ne parlera pas,	*I shall not speak, &c.*	Il n' aura pas parlé,	*I shall not have spoken, &c.*
Nous ne parlerons pas,		Nous n' aurons pas parlé,	
Vous ne parlerez pas,		Vous n' aurez pas parlé,	
Ils ne parleront pas,		Ils n' auront pas parlé,	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Je ne parlerais pas,	*I should not speak, &c.*	Je n'aurais pas parlé,	*I should not have spoken, &c.*
Tu ne parlerais pas,		Tu n'aurais pas parlé,	
Il ne parlerait pas,		Il n'aurait pas parlé,	
Nous ne parlerions pas,		Nous n'aurions pas parlé,	
Vous ne parleriez pas,		Vous n'auriez pas parlé,	
Ils ne parleraient pas,		Ils n'auraient pas parlé,	

IMPERATIVE.

Ne parle pas,	*Do not speak.*
Qu'il ne parle pas,	*Let him not speak.*
Ne parlons pas,	*Let us not speak.*
Ne parlez pas,	*Do not speak.*
Qu'ils ne parlent pas,	*Let them not speak.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Que je ne parle pas,	*That I may not speak, &c.*	Que je n'aie pas parlé,	*That I may not have spoken, &c.*
Que tu ne parles pas,		Que tu n'aies pas parlé,	
Qu'il ne parle pas,		Qu'il n'ait pas parlé,	
Que nous ne parlions pas,		Que nous n'ayons pas parlé,	
Que vous ne parliez pas,		Que vous n'ayez pas parlé,	
Qu'ils ne parlent pas,		Qu'ils n'aient pas parlé,	

Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
Que je ne parlasse pas,	*That I might not speak, &c.*	Que je n'eusse pas parlé,	*That I might not have spoken, &c.*
Que tu ne parlasses pas,		Que tu n'eusses pas parlé,	
Qu'il ne parlât pas,		Qu'il n'eût pas parlé,	
Que nous ne parlassions pas,		Que nous n'eussions pas parlé,	
Que vous ne parlassiez pas,		Que vous n'eussiez pas parlé,	
Qu'ils ne parlassent pas,		Qu'ils n'eussent pas parlé,	

Practise in the same manner :—

Ne point parler,	*Not to speak.*
Ne jamais parler,	*Never to speak.*

VERBS CONJUGATED INTERROGATIVELY.

348. When a verb is conjugated interrogatively, which can be done only in the *Indicative* and *Conditional* Moods, the pronoun is placed after the verb, and connected with it by a hyphen.

349. In compound tenses, the pronoun is placed *between the auxiliary* and the participle.

350. When the third person singular of a verb ends in a vowel, the letter *t*, with a hyphen before and after it, is placed between the verb and the pronoun for the sake of euphony.

351. When the first person singular of a verb ends in *e* mute, that *e* becomes accented.

352. Questions are often asked by *Est-ce que*, and then the nominative precedes the verb. This mode of interrogation is generally used with monosyllabic verbs in the first person singular of the present of the indicative.

Therefore, instead of saying—		We must say—
Cours-je?	Do I run?	*Est-ce que je cours?*
Pars-je?	Do I set out?	*Est-ce que je pars?*
Vends-je?	Do I sell?	*Est-ce que je vends?*
Lis-je?	Do I read?	*Est-ce que je lis?*

353. When the nominative of the verb is a noun, it is placed first, and one of the pronouns *il*, *elle*, *ils*, or *elles*, is placed after the verb; as,

Votre *frère* est-*il* arrivé?	*Has your brother arrived?*
Vos *sœurs* chantent-*elles*?	*Do your sisters sing?*

EXAMPLE OF A VERB CONJUGATED INTERROGATIVELY.

354.

INDICATIVE.

Simple Tenses.		Compound Tenses.	
Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Porté-je?	Do I carry, &c.	Ai-je porté?	Have I carried, &c.
Portes-tu?		As-tu porté?	
Porte-t-il?		A-t-il porté?	
Portons-nous?		Avons-nous porté?	
Portez-vous?		Avez-vous porté?	
Portent-ils?		Ont-ils porté?	
Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
Portais-je?	Was I carrying, &c.	Avais-je porté?	Had I carried, &c.
Portais-tu?		Avais-tu porté?	
Portait-il?		Avait-il porté?	
Portions-nous?		Avions-nous porté?	
Portiez-vous?		Aviez-vous porté?	
Portaient-ils?		Avaient-ils porté?	

Perfect.		*Compound of the Perfect.*	
Portai-je ?	Did I carry! &c.	Eus-je porté ?	Had I carried! &c.
Portas-tu ?		Eus-tu porté ?	
Porta-t-il ?		Eut-il porté ?	
Portâmes-nous ?		Eûmes-nous porté ?	
Portâtes-vous ?		Eûtes-vous porté ?	
Portèrent-ils ?		Eurent-ils porté ?	

Future.		*Compound of the Future.*	
Porterai-je ?	Shall I carry! &c.	Aurai-je porté ?	Shall I have carried! &c.
Porteras-tu ?		Auras-tu porté ?	
Portera-t-il ?		Aura-t-il porté ?	
Porterons-nous ?		Aurons-nous porté ?	
Porterez-vous ?		Aurez-vous porté ?	
Porteront-ils ?		Auront-ils porté ?	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Porterais-je ?	Should I carry! &c.	Aurais-je porté ?	Should I have carried! &c.
Porterais-tu ?		Aurais-tu porté ?	
Porterait-il ?		Aurait-il porté ?	
Porterions-nous ?		Aurions-nous porté ?	
Porteriez-vous ?		Auriez-vous porté ?	
Porteraient-ils ?		Auraient-ils porté ?	

EXAMPLE OF A VERB CONJUGATED BOTH NEGATIVELY AND INTERROGATIVELY.

355.

INDICATIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Ne reçois-je pas ?	Do I not receive! &c.	N' ai-je pas reçu ?	Have I not received! &c.
Ne reçois-tu pas ?		N' as-tu pas reçu ?	
Ne reçoit-il pas ?		N' a-t-il pas reçu ?	
Ne recevons-nous pas ?		N' avons-nous pas reçu ?	
Ne recevez-vous pas ?		N' avez-vous pas reçu ?	
Ne reçoivent-ils pas ?		N' ont-ils pas reçu ?	

Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
Ne recevais-je pas ?	Was I not receiving! &c.	N' avais-je pas reçu ?	Had I not received! &c.
Ne recevais-tu pas ?		N' avais-tu pas reçu ?	
Ne recevait-il pas ?		N' avait-il pas reçu ?	
Ne recevions-nous pas ?		N' avions-nous pas reçu ?	
Ne receviez-vous pas ?		N' aviez-vous pas reçu ?	
Ne recevaient-ils pas ?		N' avaient-ils pas reçu ?	

Perfect.		*Compound of the Perfect.*	
Ne reçus-je pas ?	Did I not receive! &c.	N' eus-je pas reçu ?	Had I not received! &c.
Ne reçus-tu pas ?		N' eus-tu pas reçu ?	
Ne reçut-il pas ?		N' eut-il pas reçu ?	
Ne reçûmes-nous pas ?		N' eûmes-nous pas reçu ?	
Ne reçûtes-vous pas ?		N' eûtes-vous pas reçu ?	
Ne reçurent-ils pas ?		N' eurent-ils pas reçu ?	

Future.		*Compound of the Future.*	
Ne recevrai-je pas?	*Shall I not receive?* &c.	N' aurai-je pas reçu?	*Shall I not have received?* &c.
Ne recevras-tu pas?		N' auras-tu pas reçu?	
Ne recevra-t-il pas?		N' aura-t-il pas reçu?	
Ne recevrons-nous pas?		N' aurons-nous pas reçu?	
Ne recevrez-vous pas?		N' aurez-vous pas reçu?	
Ne recevront-ils pas?		N' auront-ils pas reçu?	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Ne recevrais-je pas?	*Should I not receive?* &c.	N' aurais-je pas reçu?	*Should I not have received?* &c.
Ne recevrais-tu pas?		N' aurais-tu pas reçu?	
Ne recevrait-il pas?		N' aurait-il pas reçu?	
Ne recevrions-nous pas?		N' aurions-nous pas reçu?	
Ne recevriez-vous pas?		N' auriez-vous pas reçu?	
Ne recevraient-ils pas?		N' auraient-ils pas reçu?	

II. CONJUGATION OF PASSIVE VERBS.

356. A *Passive* verb expresses an action received or suffered by its subject or nominative. It is conjugated by adding the auxiliary *être* throughout all its tenses to the past participle of the active verb.

357. In passive verbs, the past participle agrees in gender and number with the subject.

NOTE.—*The feminine of the past participle is formed by adding* e *mute, and the plural by adding* s.

It must be remembered that, when the second person plural has reference only to *one* person, the past participle must be put in the *singular*; so, in speaking to a boy, *vous serez* LOUÉ, and in speaking to a girl, *vous serez* LOUÉE must be used.

EXAMPLE OF THE CONJUGATION OF A PASSIVE VERB.

358.

INFINITIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Être loué, *To be praised.*	Avoir été loué, { *To have been praised.*

Participle Present.	*Compound of the Participle Present.*
Étant loué, Being praised.	Ayant été loué, { *Having been praised.*

INDICATIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Je suis loué *or* louée,		J' ai été loué *or* louée,	
Tu es loué *or* louée,		Tu as été loué *or* louée,	
Il est loué,		Il a été loué,	
Elle est louée,		Elle a été louée,	
Nous sommes loués *or* louées,	*I am praised, &c.*	Nous avons été loués *or* louées,	*I have been praised, &c.*
Vous êtes loués *or* louées,		Vous avez été loués *or* louées,	
Ils sont loués,		Ils ont été loués,	
Elles sont louées,		Elles ont été louées,	

Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
J' étais loué *or* louée,		J' avais été loué *or* louée,	
Tu étais loué *or* louée,		Tu avais été loué *or* louée,	
Il était loué,		Il avait été loué,	
Elle était louée,		Elle avait été louée,	
Nous étions loués *or* louées,	*I was praised, &c.*	Nous avions été loués *or* louées,	*I had been praised, &c.*
Vous étiez loués *or* louées,		Vous aviez été loués *or* louées,	
Ils étaient loués,		Ils avaient été loués,	
Elles étaient louées,		Elles avaient été louées,	

Perfect.	*Compound of the Perfect.*
Je fus loué *or* louée, *&c.*	J' eus été loué *or* louée, *&c.*
I was praised, &c.	*I had been praised, &c.*

Future.	*Compound of the Future.*
Je serai loué *or* louée, *&c.*	J' aurai été loué *or* louée, *&c.*
I shall be praised, &c.	*I shall have been praised, &c.*

CONDITIONAL.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Je serais loué *or* louée, *&c.*	J' aurais été loué *or* louée, *&c.*
I should be praised, &c.	*I should have been praised, &c.*

IMPERATIVE.

Sois loué, *m.*, *or* louée, *f.*,	*Be thou praised.*
Qu' il soit loué,	*Let him be praised.*
Qu' elle soit louée,	*Let her be praised.*
Soyons loués, *m.*, *or* louées, *f.*,	*Let us be praised.*
Soyez loués, *m.*, *or* louées, *f.*,	*Be you praised.*
Qu' ils soient loués, *m.*, Qu' elles soient louées, *f.*,	*Let them be praised.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Que je sois loué *or* louée, *&c.*	Que j' aie été loué *or* louée, *&c.*
That I may be praised, &c.	*That I may have been praised, &c.*
Imperfect.	*Compound of the Imperfect.*
Que je fusse loué *or* louée, *&c.*	Que j' eusse été loué *or* louée, *&c.*
That I might be praised, &c.	*That I might have been praised, &c.*

III. OF NEUTER VERBS.

359. A *Neuter* verb expresses a state of being or an intransitive action, and therefore does not govern a case.

360. Neuter verbs are conjugated like active verbs, and take generally the auxiliary *avoir* in their compound tenses.

361. The following are conjugated with *être* :—

aller,	*to go.*	parvenir,	*to succeed.*
arriver,	*to arrive.*	provenir,	*to proceed.*
décéder,	*to die.*	redevenir,	*to become again.*
déchoir,	*to decay.*	rentrer,	*to come in again.*
devenir,	*to become.*	repartir,	*to set out again.*
disconvenir,	*to disown.*	rester,	*to remain.*
éclore,	*to blow.*	retomber,	*to fall again.*
entrer,	*to enter.*	retourner,	*to return.*
intervenir,	*to intervene.*	revenir,	*to come back.*
mourir,	*to die.*	survenir,	*to happen.*
naître,	*to be born.*	tomber,	*to fall.*
partir,	*to set out.*	venir,	*to come.*

362. The following neuter verbs are either conjugated with *avoir* or *être*. *Avoir* is used when they express an action ; *être* when they express the result of that action.

accourir,	*to run to.*	descendre,	*to go down.*
accroître,	*to increase.*	disparaître,	*to disappear.*
apparaître, comparaître,	*to appear.*	échapper,	*to escape.*
		grandir,	*to grow.*
croître,	*to grow.*	monter,	*to go up.*
déborder,	*to overflow.*	passer,	*to pass.*
demeurer,	*to remain.*	sortir,	*to go out.*

IV. OF REFLECTIVE VERBS.

363. The *Reflective*, also called *Pronominal*, Verbs are conjugated with two pronouns throughout all their tenses, except in the Imperative mood. They are conjugated in their simple tenses like the regular verbs, and in their compound tenses they require the auxiliary *être*.

364. The past participle of a reflective verb agrees in gender and number with the objective pronoun when it is the *direct* object, but not when it is the indirect ; as,

Nous *nous* sommes *lavés (m. pl.).*	*We have washed* ourselves.
Elle *se* serait *coupée.*	*She would have cut* herself.

Whereas,

Nous nous sommes *parlé.*	*We have spoken* TO one another.
Elles se sont écrit.	They have written TO one another.

CONJUGATION OF A REFLECTIVE VERB.

365.

INFINITIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Se promener, *to walk, to take a walk.*	S'être promené *(m.)* / *or* promenée *(f.)*, *to have walked.*

Participle Present.	*Compound of the Participle Present.*
Se promenant, *walking.*	S'étant promené *(m.)* / *or* promenée *(f.)*, *having walked.*

Participle Past.—Promené, *m. s.*; Promenée, *f. s.*; Promenés, *m. pl.*; Promenées, *f. pl.*

INDICATIVE.

Present.	*I walk, &c.*	*Compound of the Present.*	*I have walked, &c.*
Je me promène,		Je me suis promené, *(m.) or* promenée *(f.)*,	
Tu te promènes,		Tu t'es promené,	
Il se promène,		Il s'est promené,	
Nous nous promenons,		Nous nous sommes promenés, *(m.) or* promenées *(f.)*,	
Vous vous promenez,		Vous vous êtes promenés,	
Ils se promènent,		Ils se sont promenés,	

Imperfect.	*I was walking, &c.*	*Compound of the Imperfect.*	*I had walked, &c.*
Je me promenais,		Je m'étais promené,	
Tu te promenais,		Tu t'étais promené,	
Il se promenait,		Il s'était promené,	
Nous nous promenions,		Nous nous étions promenés,	
Vous vous promeniez,		Vous vous étiez promenés,	
Ils se promenaient,		Ils s'étaient promenés,	

Perfect.	*I walked, &c.*	*Compound of the Perfect.*	*I had walked, &c.*
Je me promenai,		Je me fus promené,	
Tu te promenas,		Tu te fus promené,	
Il se promena,		Il se fut promené,	
Nous nous promenâmes,		Nous nous fûmes promenés,	
Vous vous promenâtes,		Vous vous fûtes promenés,	
Ils se promenèrent,		Ils se furent promenés,	

Future.	*I shall walk, &c.*	*Compound of the Future.*	*I shall have walked, &c.*
Je me promènerai,		Je me serai promené,	
Tu te promèneras,		Tu te seras promené,	
Il se promènera,		Il se sera promené,	
Nous nous promènerons,		Nous nous serons promenés,	
Vous vous promènerez,		Vous vous serez promenés,	
Ils se promèneront,		Ils se seront promenés,	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Je me promènerais,		Je me serais promené,	
Tu te promènerais,		Tu te serais promené,	
Il se promènerait,	*I should walk, &c.*	Il se serait promené,	*I should have walked, &c.*
Nous nous promènerions,		Nous nous serions promenés,	
Vous vous promèneriez,		Vous vous seriez promenés,	
Ils se promèneraient,		Ils se seraient promenés,	

IMPERATIVE.

Promène-toi,	*Walk (thou).*
Qu' il se promène,	*Let him walk.*
Promenons-nous,	*Let us walk.*
Promenez-vous,	*Walk (you).*
Qu' ils se promènent,	*Let them walk.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Que je me promène,		Que je me sois promené,	
Que tu te promènes,		Que tu te sois promené,	
Qu' il se promène,	*That I may walk, &c.*	Qu' il se soit promené,	*That I may have walked, &c.*
Que nous nous promenions,		Que nous nous soyons promenés,	
Que vous vous promeniez,		Que vous vous soyez promenés,	
Qu' ils se promènent,		Qu' ils se soient promenés,	

Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
Que je me promenasse,		Que je me fusse promené,	
Que tu te promenasses,		Que tu te fusses promené,	
Qu' il se promenât,	*That I might walk, &c.*	Qu' il se fût promené,	*That I might have walked, &c.*
Que nous nous promenassions,		Que nous nous fussions promenés,	
Que vous vous promenassiez,		Que vous vous fussiez promenés,	
Qu' ils se promenassent,		Qu' ils se fussent promenés,	

366. Conjugate in the same manner :—

S' arrêter,	*To stop.*	Se dépêcher,	*To make haste.*
Se baigner,	*To bathe.*	S' enrhumer,	*To catch cold.*
Se baisser,	*To stoop.*	Se lever,	*To rise.*

REFLECTIVE VERB CONJUGATED NEGATIVELY.

367.

INFINITIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Ne pas se flatter, { *Not to flatter one's self.*	Ne s' être pas flatté *(m.)* or flattée *(f.)*, } *Not to have flattered one's self.*

Participle Present.	*Compound of the Participle Present.*
Ne se flattant pas, { *Not flattering one's self.*	Ne s' étant pas flatté *(m.)* or flattée *(f.)*, } *Not having flattered one's self.*

INDICATIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Je ne me flatte pas,	Je ne me suis pas flatté,
Tu ne te flattes pas,	Tu ne t' es pas flatté,
Il ne se flatte pas,	Il ne s' est pas flatté,
Nous ne nous flattons pas, &c.	Nous ne nous sommes pas flattés, &c.
Vous ne vous flattez pas,	Vous ne vous êtes pas flattés,
Ils ne se flattent pas,	Ils ne se sont pas flattés,
I do not flatter myself,	*I have not flattered myself,*

Imperfect.	*Compound of the Imperfect.*
Je ne me flattais pas,	Je ne m' étais pas flatté,
Tu ne te flattais pas,	Tu ne t' étais pas flatté,
Il ne se flattait pas,	Il ne s' était pas flatté,
Nous ne nous flattions pas, &c.	Nous ne nous étions pas flattés, &c.
Vous ne vous flattiez pas,	Vous ne vous étiez pas flattés,
Ils ne se flattaient pas,	Ils ne s' étaient pas flattés,
I was not flattering myself,	*I had not flattered myself,*

Perfect.	*Compound of the Perfect.*
Je ne me flattai pas,	Je ne me fus pas flatté,
Tu ne te flattas pas,	Tu ne te fus pas flatté,
Il ne se flatta pas,	Il ne se fut pas flatté,
Nous ne nous flattâmes pas, &c.	Nous ne nous fûmes pas flattés, &c.
Vous ne vous flattâtes pas,	Vous ne vous fûtes pas flattés,
Ils ne se flattèrent pas,	Ils ne se furent pas flattés,
I did not flatter myself,	*I had not flattered myself,*

Future.		*Compound of the Future.*	
Je ne me flatterai pas,	*I shall not flatter myself, &c.*	Je ne me serai pas flatté,	*I shall not have flattered myself, &c.*
Tu ne te flatteras pas,		Tu ne te seras pas flatté,	
Il ne se flattera pas,		Il ne se sera pas flatté,	
Nous ne nous flatterons pas,		Nous ne nous serons pas flattés,	
Vous ne vous flatterez pas,		Vous ne vous serez pas flattés,	
Ils ne se flatteront pas,		Ils ne se seront pas flattés,	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Je ne me flatterais pas,	Je ne me serais pas flatté,
I should not flatter myself, &c.	*I should not have flattered myself, &c.*
Tu ne te flatterais pas,	Tu ne te serais pas flatté,
Il ne se flatterait pas,	Il ne se serait pas flatté,
Nous ne nous flatterions pas,	Nous ne nous serions pas flattés,
Vous ne vous flatteriez pas,	Vous ne vous seriez pas flattés,
Ils ne se flatteraient pas.	Ils ne se seraient pas flattés.

IMPERATIVE.

Ne te flatte pas,	*Do not flatter thyself.*
Qu' il ne se flatte pas,	*Let him not flatter himself.*
Ne nous flattons pas,	*Let us not flatter ourselves.*
Ne vous flattez pas,	*Do not flatter yourselves.*
Qu' ils ne se flattent pas,	*Let them not flatter themselves.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Que je ne me flatte pas,	Que je ne me sois pas flatté,
That I may not flatter myself, &c.	*That I may not have flattered myself, &c.*
Que tu ne te flattes pas,	Que tu ne te sois pas flatté,
Qu' il ne se flatte pas,	Qu' il ne se soit pas flatté,
Que nous ne nous flattions pas,	Que nous ne nous soyons pas flattés,
Que vous ne vous flattiez pas,	Que vous ne vous soyez pas flattés,
Qu' ils ne se flattent pas.	Qu' ils ne se soient pas flattés.

Imperfect.	*Compound of the Imperfect.*
Que je ne me flattasse pas,	Que je ne me fusse pas flatté,
That I might not flatter myself, &c.	*That I might not have flattered myself, &c.*
Que tu ne te flattasses pas,	Que tu ne te fusses pas flatté,
Qu' il ne se flattât pas,	Qu' il ne se fût pas flatté,
Que nous ne nous flattassions pas,	Que nous ne nous fussions pas flattés,
Que vous ne vous flattassiez pas,	Que vous ne vous fussiez pas flattés,
Qu' ils ne se flattassent pas.	Qu' ils ne se fussent pas flattés.

REFLECTIVE VERB

368. CONJUGATED INTERROGATIVELY.

INDICATIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Me levé-je? *or,*	Me suis-je levé?
Est-ce que je me lève?	T' es-tu levé?
Te lèves-tu?	S' est-il levé?
Se lève-t-il?	Nous sommes-nous levés?
Nous levons-nous?	Vous êtes-vous levés?
Vous levez-vous?	Se sont-ils levés?
Se lèvent-ils?	

Do I rise? &c. — *Have I risen? &c.*

Imperfect.	*Compound of the Imperfect.*
Me levais-je?	M' étais-je levé?
Te levais-tu?	T' étais-tu levé?
Se levait-il?	S' était-il levé?
Nous levions-nous?	Nous étions-nous levés?
Vous leviez-vous?	Vous étiez-vous levés?
Se levaient-ils?	S' étaient-ils levés?

Was I rising? &c. — *Had I risen? &c.*

Perfect.	*Compound of the Perfect.*
Me levai-je?	Me fus-je levé?
Te levas-tu?	Te fus-tu levé?
Se leva-t-il?	Se fut-il levé?
Nous levâmes-nous?	Nous fûmes-nous levés?
Vous levâtes-vous?	Vous fûtes-vous levés?
Se levèrent-ils?	Se furent-ils levés?

Did I rise? &c. — *Had I risen? &c.*

Future.	*Compound of the Future.*
Me lèverai-je?	Me serai-je levé?
Te lèveras-tu?	Te seras-tu levé?
Se lèvera-t-il?	Se sera-t-il levé?
Nous lèverons-nous?	Nous serons-nous levés?
Vous lèverez-vous?	Vous serez-vous levés?
Se lèveront-ils?	Se seront-ils levés?

Shall I rise? &c. — *Shall I have risen? &c.*

CONDITIONAL.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Me lèverais-je?	Me serais-je levé?
Te lèverais-tu?	Te serais-tu levé?
Se lèverait-il?	Se serait-il levé?
Nous lèverions-nous?	Nous serions-nous levés?
Vous lèveriez-vous?	Vous seriez-vous levés?
Se lèveraient-ils?	Se seraient-ils levés?

Should I rise? &c. — *Should I have risen? &c.*

REFLECTIVE VERB

CONJUGATED INTERROGATIVELY AND NEGATIVELY.

369.

INDICATIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Ne me blessé-je pas ?	Ne me suis-je pas blessé ?
Do I not hurt myself ? &c.	*Have I not hurt myself ?* &c.
Ne te blesses-tu pas ?	Ne t' es-tu pas blessé ?
Ne se blesse-t-il pas ?	Ne s' est-il pas blessé ?
Ne nous blessons-nous pas ?	Ne nous sommes-nous pas blessés ?
Ne vous blessez-vous pas ?	Ne vous êtes-vous pas blessés ?
Ne se blessent-ils pas ?	Ne se sont-ils pas blessés ?

Imperfect.	*Compound of the Imperfect.*
Ne me blessais-je pas ?	Ne m' étais-je pas blessé ?
Was I not hurting myself ? &c.	*Had I not hurt myself ?* &c.
Ne te blessais-tu pas ?	Ne t' étais-tu pas blessé ?
Ne se blessait-il pas ?	Ne s' était-il pas blessé ?
Ne nous blessions-nous pas ?	Ne nous étions-nous pas blessés ?
Ne vous blessiez-vous pas ?	Ne vous étiez-vous pas blessés ?
Ne se blessaient-ils pas ?	Ne s' étaient-ils pas blessés ?

Perfect.	*Compound of the Perfect.*
Ne me blessai-je pas ?	Ne me fus-je pas blessé ?
Did I not hurt myself ? &c.	*Had I not hurt myself ?* &c.
Ne te blessas-tu pas ?	Ne te fus-tu pas blessé ?
Ne se blessa-t-il pas ?	Ne se fut-il pas blessé ?
Ne nous blessâmes-nous pas ?	Ne nous fûmes-nous pas blessés ?
Ne vous blessâtes-vous pas ?	Ne vous fûtes-vous pas blessés ?
Ne se blessèrent-ils pas ?	Ne se furent-ils pas blessés ?

Future.	*Compound of the Future.*
Ne me blesserai-je pas ?	Ne me serai-je pas blessé ?
Shall I not hurt myself ? &c.	*Shall I not have hurt myself ?* &c.
Ne te blesseras-tu pas ?	Ne te seras-tu pas blessé ?
Ne se blessera-t-il pas ?	Ne se sera-t-il pas blessé ?
Ne nous blesserons-nous pas ?	Ne nous serons-nous pas blessés ?
Ne vous blesserez-vous pas ?	Ne vous serez-vous pas blessés ?
Ne se blesseront-ils pas ?	Ne se seront-ils pas blessés ?

CONDITIONAL.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Ne me blesserais-je pas ?	Ne me serais-je pas blessé ?
Should I not hurt myself ? &c.	*Should I not have hurt myself ?* &c.
Ne te blesserais-tu pas ?	Ne te serais-tu pas blessé ?
Ne se blesserait-il pas ?	Ne se serait-il pas blessé ?
Ne nous blesserions-nous pas ?	Ne nous serions-nous pas blessés ?
Ne vous blesseriez-vous pas ?	Ne vous seriez-vous pas blessés ?
Ne se blesseraient-ils pas ?	Ne se seraient-ils pas blessés ?

V. OF IMPERSONAL OR UNIPERSONAL VERBS.

370. The Impersonal verbs are only used in the third person singular. They have their inflections according to the conjugation to which they belong. In their compound tenses some take *avoir*, and others *être*. The past participle is invariable.

371. List of the Impersonal verbs of most general occurrence :—

Il arrive,	*It happens.*	Il neige,	*It snows.*
Il dégèle,	*It thaws.*	Il paraît,	*It appears.*
Il éclaire,	*It lightens.*	Il pleut,	*It rains.*
Il faut,	*It is necessary.*	Il semble,	*It seems.*
Il gèle,	*It freezes.*	Il sied,	*It is becoming.*
Il grêle,	*It hails.*	Il tonne,	*It thunders.*
Il importe,	*It matters.*	Il y a,	*There is, there are.*

GELER, to Freeze.

372.

			Compound of the	
IND. *Pres.*	Il gèle,	*It freezes.*	IND. *Pres.*	Il a gelé.
Imperfect.	Il gelait,	*It was freezing.*	*Imperfect.*	Il avait gelé.
Perfect.	Il gela,	*It froze.*	*Perfect.*	Il eut gelé.
Future.	Il gèlera,	*It will freeze.*	*Future.*	Il aura gelé.
COND. *Pres.*	Il gèlerait,	*It would freeze.*	COND. *Pres.*	Il aurait gelé.
SUBJ. *Pres.*	Qu' il gèle,	{ *That it may freeze.*	SUBJ. *Pres.*	Qu'il ait gelé.
Imperfect.	Qu'il gelât,	{ *That it might freeze.*	*Imperfect.*	{ Qu' il eût gelé.

NEIGER, to Snow.

373.

			Compound of the	
IND. *Pres.*	Il neige,	*It snows.*	IND. *Pres.*	Il a neigé.
Imperfect.	Il neigeait,	*It was snowing.*	*Imperfect.*	Il avait neigé.
Perfect.	Il neigea,	*It snowed.*	*Perfect.*	Il eut neigé.
Future.	Il neigera,	*It will snow.*	*Future.*	Il aura neigé.
COND. *Pres.*	Il neigerait,	*It would snow.*	COND. *Pres.*	Il aurait neigé.
SUBJ. *Pres.*	Qu'il neige,	*That it may snow.*	SUBJ. *Pres.*	Qu'il ait neigé.
Imperfect.	Qu'il neigeât,	{ *That it might snow.*	*Imperfect.*	Qu'il eût neigé.

374. *PLEUVOIR, to Rain.*

Participle Present.—Pleuvant, *Raining.*
Participle Past.—Plu, *Rained.*

			Compound of the	
IND. *Pres.*	Il pleut,	*It rains.*	IND. *Pres.*	Il a plu.
Imperfect.	Il pleuvait,	*It was raining.*	*Imperfect.*	Il avait plu.
Perfect.	Il plut,	*It rained.*	*Perfect.*	Il eut plu.
Future.	Il pleuvra,	*It will rain.*	*Future.*	Il aura plu.
COND. *Pres.*	Il pleuvrait,	*It would rain.*	COND. *Pres.*	Il aurait plu.
SUBJ. *Pres.*	Qu'il pleuve,	*That it may rain.*	SUBJ. *Pres.*	Qu'il ait plu.
Imperfect.	Qu'il plût,	*That it might rain.*	*Imperfect.*	Qu'il eût plu.

FALLOIR, to be Necessary.

375. *Participle Past.*—Fallu.

			Compound of the	
IND. *Pres.*	Il faut,	*It is necessary,* &c.	IND. *Pres.*	Il a fallu.
Imperfect.	Il fallait.		*Imperfect.*	Il avait fallu.
Perfect.	Il fallut.		*Perfect.*	Il eut fallu.
Future.	Il faudra.		*Future.*	Il aura fallu.
COND. *Pres.*	Il faudrait.		COND. *Pres.*	Il aurait fallu.
SUBJ. *Pres.*	Qu'il faille.		SUBJ. *Pres.*	Qu'il ait fallu.
Imperfect.	Qu'il fallût.		*Imperfect.*	Qu'il eût fallu.

376. REMARK.—After *il faut, il fallait, etc.*, there is generally placed the conjunction *que*, with another verb in the subjunctive; as,

Il faut que je parte.	*I must (it is necessary that I) go away.*
Il faut que je le fasse.	*I must do it.*

377. The verb after *falloir* may also remain in the infinitive, as in English; as, *Il me faut finir*, I must finish (it is necessary for me to finish). *Falloir* is also used in the following manner:—

Il me faut un livre.	*I want (or need) a book. (It is necessary for me to have a book.)*
Il te faut un livre.	*Thou wantest a book.*
Il lui faut un livre.	*He wants a book.*
Il nous faut des livres.	*We want books.*
Il vous faut des livres.	*You want books.*
Il leur faut des livres.	*They want books.*
Vous faut-il un livre? &c.	Do you want a book? &c.

378. *Y AVOIR, there to Be.*

PART. *Pres.*—	Y ayant,	*There being.*
IND. *Pres.*	Il y a,	*There is, there are.*
Imperfect.	Il y avait,	*There was, there were.*
Perfect.	Il y eut,	*There was, there were.*
Future.	Il y aura,	*There will be.*
COND. *Pres.*	Il y aurait,	*There would be.*
SUBJ. *Pres.*	Qu'il y ait,	*That there may be.*
Imperfect.	Qu'il y eût,	*That there might be.*

COMPOUND TENSES.

Compound of the

PART. *Pres.*	Y ayant eu,	*There having been.*
IND. *Pres.*	Il y a eu,	*There has (*or *have) been.*
Imperfect.	Il y avait eu,	*There had been.*
Perfect.	Il y eut eu,	*There had been.*
Future.	Il y aura eu,	*There will have been.*
COND. *Pres.*	Il y aurait eu,	*There would have been.*
SUBJ. *Pres.*	Qu'il y ait eu,	*That there may have been.*
Imperfect.	Qu'il y eût eu,	*That there might have been.*

NEGATIVELY. Il n' y a pas, *there is* (or *are*) *not*, il n' y avait pas, &c.
INTERROGATIVELY. Y a-t-il, *is* (or *are*) *there*? y avait-il? y eut-il? &c.
INTER. AND NEG. N' y a-t-il pas, *is* (or *are*) *there not*? n' y avait-il pas, *was* (or *were*) *there not*? n' y eut-il pas? n' y aura-t-il pas? n' y aurait-il pas?—N' y a-t-il pas eu? *has there not been?* &c.

OBSERVATIONS ON SOME VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION AND THEIR PECULIAR ORTHOGRAPHY.

I. OF VERBS ENDING IN *CER*.

379. Verbs ending in *cer* take a cedilla under the *c* before the vowels *a* and *o*, to indicate that the *c* preserves the sound of *s*.

EXAMPLE.

(To save space we give only the pronoun of the first person singular, leaving the others to be supplied by the learner.)

PERCER, to Pierce.

Participle Present.—Perçant. | *Participle Past.*—Percé.

IND. *Pres.* Je perce, perces, perce; perçons, percez, percent.
Imperfect. Je perçais, perçais, perçait; perçions, perciez, perçaient.

Perfect. Je perçai, perças, perça; perçâmes, perçâtes, percèrent.
Future. Je percerai, percerас, percera; percerons, percerez, perceront.
COND. *Pres.* Je percerais, percerais, percerait; percerions, percериez, perceraient.
IMPERAT. Perce, qu' il perce; perçons, percez, qu' ils percent.
SUBJ. *Pres.* Que je perce, perces, perce; percions, perciez, percent.
Imperfect. Que je perçasse, perçasses, perçât; perçassions, perçassiez, perçassent.

380. Conjugate in the same manner :—

Annoncer, *to announce.*	Menacer, *to menace.*
Commencer, *to begin.*	Rincer, &c., *to rinse, &c.*

II. OF VERBS ENDING IN *GER.*

381. Verbs ending in *ger* take *e* mute after *g* before the vowels *a* and *o*, to indicate that the *g* preserves its soft sound.

EXAMPLE.

MANGER, to Eat.

Participle Present.—Mang*e*ant. | *Participle Past.*—Mangé.

IND. *Pres.* Je mange, manges, mange; mang*e*ons, mangez, mangent.
Imperfect. Je mang*e*ais, mang*e*ais, mang*e*ait; mangions, mangiez, mang*e*aient.
Perfect. Je mang*e*ai, mang*e*as, mang*e*a; mang*e*âmes, mang*e*âtes, mangèrent.
Future. Je mangerai, mangeras, mangera; mangerons, mangerez, mangeront.
COND. *Pres.* Je mangerais, mangerais, mangerait; mangerions, mangeriez, mangeraient.
IMPERAT. Mange, qu' il mange; mang*e*ons, mangez, qu' ils mangent.
SUBJ. *Pres.* Que je mange, manges, mange; mangions, mangiez, mangent.
Imperfect. Que je mang*e*asse, mang*e*asses, mang*e*ât; mang*e*assions, mang*e*assiez, mang*e*assent.

382. Conjugate in the same manner :—

Arranger, *to arrange.*	Juger, *to judge.*
Corriger, *to correct.*	Songer, &c., *to think, &c.*

III. OF VERBS ENDING IN *YER.*

383. Verbs ending in *yer* change the *y* into *i* whenever it stands before *e* mute.

NOTE.—This rule applies, not to verbs of the first conjugation only, but to any verb the root of which ends in y.

EXAMPLE.

PAYER, to Pay.

Participle Pres.—Payant. | *Participle Past.*—Payé.

IND. *Pres.* Je paie, paies, paie ; payons, payez, paient.
Imperfect. Je payais, payais, payait ; payions, payiez, payaient.
Perfect. Je payai, payas, paya ; payâmes, payâtes, payèrent.
Future. Je paierai, paieras, paiera ; paierons, paierez, paieront.
COND. *Pres.* Je paierais, paierais, paierait ; paierions, paieriez, paieraient.
IMPERAT. Paie, qu' il paie ; payons, payez, qu' ils paient.
SUBJ. *Pres.* Que je paie, paies, paie ; payions, payiez, paient.
Imperfect. Que je payasse, payasses, payât ; payassions, payassiez, payassent.

384. Conjugate in the same manner :—

Employer,	*to employ.*	Nettoyer,	*to clean.*
Essayer,	*to try.*	Essuyer, &c.,	*to wipe,* &c.

IV. OF VERBS ENDING IN *ETER.*

385. Verbs ending in *eter* double the *t* before *e* mute.

EXAMPLE.

JETER, to Throw.

Participle Present.—Jetant. | *Participle Past.*—Jeté.

IND. *Pres.* Je jette, jettes, jette ; jetons, jetez, jettent.
Imperfect. Je jetais, jetais, jetait ; jetions, jetiez, jetaient.
Perfect. Je jetai, jetas, jeta ; jetâmes, jetâtes, jetèrent.
Future. Je jetterai, jetteras, jettera ; jetterons, jetterez, jetteront.
COND. *Pres.* Je jetterais, jetterais, jetterait ; jetterions, jetteriez, jetteraient.
IMPERAT. Jette, qu' il jette ; jetons, jetez, qu' ils jettent.
SUBJ. *Pres.* Que je jette, jettes, jette ; jetions, jetiez, jettent.
Imperfect. Que je jetasse, jetasses, jetât ; jetassions, jetassiez, jetassent.

386. EXCEPTIONS.—*Acheter*, to buy ; *étiqueter*, to ticket, do not double the *t*, but take a grave accent above the *e* before the *t*, when followed by *e* mute ; as, j' achète, j' achèterai, j' achèterais ; j' étiquète, j' étiquèterai, &c.

V. VERBS ENDING IN *ELER.*

387. Verbs ending in *eler* double the *l* before *e* mute.

EXAMPLE.

ÉPELER, to Spell.

Participle Present.—Épelant. | *Participle Past.*—Épelé.

IND. *Pres.* J' épel*le*, épel*les*, épel*le* ; épelons, épelez, épel*lent*.
Imperfect. J' épelais, épelais, épelait ; épelions, épeliez, épelaient.
Perfect. J' épelai, épelas, épela ; épelâmes, épelâtes, épelèrent.
Future. J' épel*lerai*, épel*leras*, épel*lera* ; épel*lerons*, épel*lerez*, épel*leront*.
COND. *Pres.* J' épel*lerais*, épel*lerais*, épel*lerait* ; épel*lerions*, épel*leriez*, épel*leraient*.
IMPERAT. Épel*le*, qu' il épel*le* ; épelons, épelez, épel*lent*.
SUBJ. *Pres.* Que j' épel*le*, épel*les*, épel*le* ; épelions, épeliez, épel*lent*.
Imperfect. Que j' épelasse, épelasses, épelât ; épelassions, épelassiez, épelassent.

388. Conjugate in the same manner :—

Appeler, *to call.*	Dételer, *to unyoke.*
Atteler, *to put to, to yoke.*	Rappeler, &c., *to recall,* &c.

389. EXCEPTIONS.—*Geler*, to freeze ; *dégeler*, to thaw ; *harceler*, to harass ; and *peler*, to peel, do not double the *l*, but take a grave accent above the *e* preceding the *l*, when followed by *e* mute ; as, il gèle, il dégèlerait, &c.

VI. OF VERBS ENDING IN *EMER, ENER, ESER, EVER.*

390. Verbs ending in *emer*, *ener*, *eser*, *ever*, take a grave accent above the *e* preceding the *m*, *n*, *s*, *v*, when the *m*, *n*, *s*, or *v*, is followed by *e* mute.

EXAMPLE.

MENER, to Lead.

Participle Present.—Menant. | *Participle Past.*—Mené.

IND. *Pres.* Je mène, mènes, mène ; menons, menez, mènent.
Imperfect. Je menais, menais, menait ; menions, meniez, menaient.
Perfect. Je menai, menas, mena ; menâmes, menâtes, menèrent.
Future. Je mènerai, mèneras, mènera ; mènerons, mènerez, mèneront.
COND. *Pres.* Je mènerais, mènerais, mènerait ; mènerions, mèneriez, mèneraient.
IMPERAT. Mène, qu' il mène ; menons, menez, qu' ils mènent.
SUBJ. *Pres.* Que je mène, mènes, mène ; menions, meniez, mènent.
Imperfect. Que je menasse, menasses, menât ; menassions, menassiez, menassent.

391. Conjugate in the same manner :—

Achever, *to finish.*	Peser, *to weigh.*
Amener, *to bring.*	Semer, *to sow.*
Lever, *to raise.*	&c., &c.

VII. OF VERBS ENDING IN *ÉDER, ÉLER, ÉRER, ÉTER*, &c.

392. Verbs ending in *éder*, *éler*, *érer*, *éter*, change the *acute* accent over the *e* before the *d*, *l*, *r*, or *t*, into a *grave* accent, when the *d*, *l*, *r*, or *t* is followed by *e* mute ; so in the verb *préférer*, to prefer, the Indicative Present would be *je préfère*, *tu préfères*, *il préfère ; nous préférons*, *vous préférez*, *ils préfèrent*. The future, *je préfèrerai*, &c.

VIII. OF VERBS ENDING IN *OUER* AND *UER*.

393. When, in verbs ending in *ouer* or *uer*, the *ou* or *u* is followed by *i*, a mark of diæresis is placed over *i*, to show that it is to be pronounced separately from *ou* or *u* ; as,

Je jouais, I played, *tu jouais*, *il jouait ; nous jouïons*, *vous jouïez*, *ils jouaient*.

Je tuais, I killed, *tu tuais*, *il tuait ; nous tuïons*, *vous tuïez*, *ils tuaient*.

OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

We shall first give a table shewing the formation of the tenses of the greater part of the irregular verbs, and then, a list of those irregular verbs which form their different tenses and persons from the five primitive tenses, in the same manner as the verbs given as examples in the table. The learner should carefully observe which tenses and persons are formed from each of the primitive tenses, and be able to give the primitive tenses of each of the verbs in the list, which contains four-fifths of all the irregular verbs.

TABLE SHEWING

OF THE GREATER PA

A.—PRIMI

I.—PRESENT OF THE INFINITIVE.*	II.—PARTI(
CONNAÎTRE *(to know).*	CONNAISsant.
ÉCRIRE *(to write).*	ÉCRIvant.
CRAINDRE *(to fear).*	CRAIGNant.

B.—DERIVA

1. FUTURE.	2. CONDITIONAL.	1. PRESENT OF THE IND.	2. IMP OF TH
——	——	*Plural.*	—
Je connaît*rai*	Je connaît*rais*		Je conna
tu connaît*ras*	tu connaît*rais*		tu conna
il connaît*ra*	il connaît*rait*		il connai
nous connaît*rons*	nous connaît*rions*	nous connaiss*ons*	nous con
vous connaît*rez*	vous connaît*riez*	vous connaiss*ez*	vous con
ils connaît*ront*	ils connaît*raient*	ils connaiss*ent*	ils conna
——	——	——	—
J' écri*rai*	J' écri*rais*		J' écriva
tu écri*ras*	tu écri*rais*		tu écriva
il écri*ra*	il écri*rait*		il écrivai
nous écri*rons*	nous écri*rions*	nous écriv*ons*	nous écri
vous écri*rez*	vous écri*riez*	vous écriv*ez*	vous écri
ils écri*ront*	ils écri*raient*	ils écriv*ent*	ils écriva
——	——	——	—
Je craind*rai*	Je craind*rais*		Je craign
tu craind*ras*	tu craind*rais*		tu craign
il craind*ra*	il craind*rait*		il craigna
nous craind*rons*	nous craind*rions*	nous craign*ons*	nous crai
vous craind*rez*	vous craind*riez*	vous craign*ez*	vous crai
ils craind*ront*	ils craind*raient*	ils craign*ent*	ils craign

* From the *Present of the Infinitive* are formed the *Future*, by changing *r*, or *re* into *rai*; the *Conditional*, by changing *r*, or *re* into *rais*.

† From the *Participl Present* are formed the d tenses and persons given a dropping the *ant* and ad different terminations acc the table of terminations (]

MATION OF THE TENSES

RREGULAR VERBS.

S E S.

ɜNT.†	III. PART. PAST.	IV.—PRES. IND. § *(Sing.)*	V.—PERFECT OF THE IND.‖
	CONNU, E. ÉCRIT, E. CRAINT, E.	CONNAIS. ÉCRIS. CRAINS.	CONNUS. ÉCRIVIS. CRAIGNIS.

ɜ E S.

ɪATIVE. *m Sing. Plural.*	4. PRESENT OF THE SUB.	ALL COMPOUND TENSES.	IMPERAT. *2nd Person Singular.*	IMPERFECT OF THE SUB.
	que je connaisse			que je connusse
	que tu connaisses		connais	que tu connusses
naisse	qu' il connaisse			qu' il connût
ns	que nous connaissions			que nous connussions
z	que vous connaissiez			que vous connussiez
naissent	qu' ils connaissent	J' ai connu, écrit, craint, &c. J' avais connu, écrit, craint, &c. J' eus connu, écrit, craint, &c. J' aurai connu, écrit, craint, &c. &c.		qu' ils connussent
–	——		——	——
	que j' écrive			que j' écrivisse
	que tu écrives		écris	que tu écrivisses
ive	qu' il écrive			qu' il écrivît
	que nous écrivions			que nous écrivissions
	que vous écriviez			que vous écrivissiez
ivent	qu' ils écrivent			qu' ils écrivissent
–	——		——	——
	que je craigne			que je craignisse
	que tu craignes		crains	que tu craignisses
gne	qu' il craigne			qu' il craignît
	que nous craignions			que nous craignissions
	que vous craigniez			que vous craignissiez
ignent	qu' ils craignent			qu' ils craignissent

§ The 2nd Pers. Sing. of the Imperat. is the same as the 1st Pers. Sing. of the Ind. Prs.

‖ *Se* is added to the *Perf. Ind.* to form the *Imp. Sub.*

A LIST OF THOSE IRREGULAR VERBS WHOSE TENSES CAN BE FORMED FROM THE PRIMITIVE TENSES, ACCORDING TO THE PRECEDING TABLE.

(Observe the Remarks at the end of the list.)

FIRST CONJUGATION.

All the verbs of the first conjugation, with the exception of aller, s' en aller, and envoyer, are regular; and none of these three forms its tenses regularly from the primitive.

SECOND CONJUGATION.

ASSAILLIR, assaillant, assailli, assaille, assaillis, *to assault.* 401.

BOUILLIR, bouillant, bouilli, bous, bouillis, *to boil.* 402.
So, rebouillir.

* COURIR, courant, couru, cours, courus, *to run.* 403.
So, accourir, concourir, discourir, encourir, parcourir, secourir.

DORMIR, dormant, dormi, dors, dormis, *to sleep.* 404.
So, endormir, s' endormir, se rendormir.

† FUIR, fuyant, fui, fuis, fuis, *to fly.* 405.
So, s' enfuir.

HAÏR, haïssant, haï, hais, haïs, *to hate.* 406.

MENTIR, mentant, mênti, mens, mentis, *to lie.* 409.
So, démentir.

OFFRIR, offrant, offert, offre, offris, *to offer.* 407.
So, mésoffrir.

OUVRIR, ouvrant, ouvert, ouvre, ouvris, *to open.* 407.
So, couvrir, découvrir, recouvrir, rouvrir.

PARTIR, partant, parti, pars, partis, *to set out.* 408.
So, repartir (répartir, like *finir*).

REPENTIR (Se), repentant, repenti, repens, repentis, *to repent.* 409.

SENTIR, sentant, senti, sens, sentis, *to feel, to smell.* 409.
So, consentir, pressentir, ressentir.

SERVIR, servant, servi, sers, servis, *to serve.* 410.
So, desservir (asservir, like *finir*).

SORTIR, sortant, sorti, sors, sortis, *to go out.* 411.
So, ressortir.

SOUFFRIR, souffrant, souffert, souffre, souffris, *to suffer.* 407.

TRESSAILLIR, tressaillant, tressailli, tressaille, tressaillis, *to start.* 401.

VÊTIR, vêtant, vêtu, vêts, vêtis, to clothe. 412.
So, dévêtir, revêtir.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

† POURVOIR, pourvoyant, pourvu, pourvois, pourvus, *to provide.* 423.
† PRÉVOIR, prévoyant, prévu, prévois, prévis, *to foresee.* 424.
† SURSEOIR, sursoyant, sursis, sursois, sursis, *to put off.* 424.

FOURTH CONJUGATION.

ABSOUDRE, absolvant, absous, m., or absoute, f., absous (no Perfect), *to absolve.* 440.
ASTREINDRE, astreignant, astreint, astreins, astreignis, *to bind to.* 464.
So, restreindre.
BATTRE, battant, battu, bats, battis, *to beat.* 441.
So, abattre, combattre, débattre, s' ébattre, rabattre, rebattre.
CEINDRE, ceignant, ceint, ceins, ceignis, *to enclose.* 464.
So, enceindre.
CONCLURE, concluant, conclu, conclus, conclus, *to conclude.* 442.
CONDUIRE, conduisant, conduit, conduis, conduisis, *to conduct.* 443.
So, éconduire, reconduire.
CONFIRE, confisant, confit, confis, confis, *to preserve.* 445.
CONNAÎTRE, connaissant, connu, connais, connus, *to know.* 447.
So, méconnaître, reconnaître.
CONSTRUIRE, construisant, construit, construis, construisis, *to construct.* 443.
CONTRAINDRE, contraignant, contraint, contrains, contraignis, *to constrain.* 449.
CONTREDIRE, contredisant, contredit, contredis, contredis, *to contradict.* 457.
COUDRE, cousant, cousu, couds, cousis, *to sew.* 448.
So, découdre, recoudre.
CRAINDRE, craignant, craint, crains, craignis, *to fear.* 449.
† CROIRE, croyant, cru, crois, crus, *to believe.* 450.
CROÎTRE, croissant, crû, crois, crûs, *to grow.* 452.
So, accroître, décroître. (453.)
CUIRE, cuisant, cuit, cuis, cuisis, *to cook.* 443.
So, recuire.
DÉDIRE, dédisant, dédit, dédis, dédis, *to disown.* 457.
DÉDUIRE, déduisant, déduit, déduis, déduisis, *to deduct.* 443.
DÉTRUIRE, détruisant, détruit, détruis, détruisis, *to destroy.* 443.

DISSOUDRE, dissolvant, dissous, dissous (no Perfect), *to dissolve.* 440.

ÉCRIRE, écrivant, écrit, écris, écrivis, *to write.* 454.
So, décrire, récrire.

EMPREINDRE, empreignant, empreint, empreins, empreignis, *to stamp.* 464.

ENDUIRE, enduisant, enduit, enduis, enduisis, *to daub.* 443.

ENFREINDRE, enfreignant, enfreint, enfreins, enfreignis, *to infringe.* 464.

ÉPREINDRE, épreignant, épreint, épreins, épreignis, *to squeeze out.* 464.

EXCLURE, excluant, exclu, exclus, exclus, *to exclude.* 442.

FEINDRE, feignant, feint, feins, feignis, *to feign.* 464.

INDUIRE, induisant, induit, induis, induisis, *to induce.* 443.

INSCRIRE, inscrivant, inscrit, inscris, inscrivis, *to inscribe.* 454.

INSTRUIRE, instruisant, instruit, instruis, instruisis, *to instruct.* 443.

INTERDIRE, interdisant, interdit, interdis, interdis, *to prohibit.* 457.

INTRODUIRE, introduisant, introduit, introduis, introduisis, *to introduce.* 443.

JOINDRE, joignant, joint, joins, joignis, *to join.* 449.
So, adjoindre, déjoindre, disjoindre, enjoindre, rejoindre.

LIRE, lisant, lu, lis, lus, *to read.* 455.
So, élire, relire.

LUIRE, luisant, lui, luis (no Perfect), *to shine.* 456.
So, reluire.

MAUDIRE, maudissant, maudit, maudis, maudis, *to curse.* 476.

MÉDIRE, médisant, médit, médis, médis, *to slander.* 457.

METTRE, mettant, mis, mets, mis, *to put.* 458.
So, admettre, commettre, compromettre, se démettre, s'entremettre, omettre, permettre, promettre, remettre, soumettre, transmettre.

MOUDRE, moulant, moulu, mouds, moulus, *to grind.* 459.
So, émoudre, remoudre, rémoudre.

NUIRE, nuisant, nui, nuis, nuisis, *to hurt.* 444.

NAÎTRE, naissant, né, nais, naquis, *to be born.* 460.

OINDRE, oignant, oint, oins, oignis, *to anoint.* 449.

PAÎTRE, paissant, pu, pais (no Perfect), *to graze.* 462.

PARAÎTRE, paraissant, paru, parais, parus, *to appear.* 447.
So, disparaître, reparaître.

PEINDRE, peignant, peint, peins, peignis, *to paint.* 464.

PLAINDRE, plaignant, plaint, plains, plaignis, *to pity.* 449.

PLAIRE, plaisant, plu, plais, plus, *to please.* 465.
So, déplaire, complaire.
PRÉDIRE, prédisant, prédit, prédis, prédis, *to foretell.* 457.
‡PRENDRE, prenant, pris, prends, pris, *to take.* 466.
So, apprendre, comprendre, désapprendre, entreprendre, se méprendre, reprendre, surprendre.
PRESCRIRE, prescrivant, prescrit, prescris, prescrivis, *to prescribe.* 454.
PRODUIRE, produisant, produit, produis, produisis, *to produce.* 443.
PROSCRIRE, proscrivant, proscrit, proscris, proscrivis, *to proscribe.* 454.
RÉDUIRE, réduisant, réduit, réduis, réduisis, *to reduce.* 443.
REPAÎTRE, repaissant, repu, repais, repus, *to feed.* 463.
RÉSOUDRE, résolvant, résolu *or* résous, résous, résolus, *to resolve.* 467.
RESTREINDRE, restreignant, restreint, restreins, restreignis, *to restrain.* 464.
RIRE, riant, ri, ris, ris, *to laugh.* 468.
So, sourire.
SOUSCRIRE, souscrivant, souscrit, souscris, souscrivis, *to subscribe.* 454.
SUFFIRE, suffisant, suffi, suffis, suffis, *to suffice.* 446.
SUIVRE, suivant, suivi, suis, suivis, *to follow.* 469.
So, poursuivre (*s' ensuivre*, 3rd Per. Sing. & Plu. only).
TAIRE, taisant, tu, tais, tus, *to conceal.* 470.
So, se taire.
TEINDRE, teignant, teint, teins, teignis, *to dye.* 464.
TRADUIRE, traduisant, traduit, traduis, traduisis, *to translate.* 443.
†TRAIRE, trayant, trait, trais, (no Perfect), *to milk.* 471.
So, abstraire, distraire, extraire, rentraire, retraire, soustraire.
TRANSCRIRE, transcrivant, transcrit, transcris, transcrivis, *to transcribe.* 454.
VAINCRE, vainquant, vaincu, vaincs, vainquis, *to conquer* 472.
So, convaincre.
VIVRE, vivant, vécu, vis, vécus, *to live.* 473.
So, revivre, survivre.

---

* *In* courir *and its compounds, the letter* i *is dropped in the* Future *and the* Conditional, *and thus* courirai *is contracted into* courrai, *and* courirais *into* courrais.

† *Verbs having* yant *in the* Participle Present, *change the* y *in the derivative tenses of the participle present into* i, *whenever it stands before* e *mute.*

‡ *In* prendre *and its compounds, the letter* n *is doubled whenever it is followed by* e *mute.*

Verbs which have no Perfect cannot have an Imperfect of the Subjunctive.

I. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

ALLER, to Go.

394.

Participle Present.—Allant. | *Participle Past.*—Allé.

1.	IND. *Present.*	Je *vais* or *vas, vas, va*; allons, allez, *vont.*
2.	*Imperfect.*	J' allais, allais, allait; allions, alliez, allaient.
3.	*Perfect.*	J' allai, allas, alla; allâmes, allâtes, allèrent.
4.	*Future.*	J' *irai, iras, ira; irons, irez, iront.*
1.	CONDITIONAL.	J' *irais, irais, irait; irions, iriez, iraient.*
1.	IMPERATIVE.	*Va*, qu'il *aille;* allons, allez, qu'ils *aillent.*
1.	SUBJ. *Present.*	Que j' *aille, ailles, aille;* allions, alliez, *aillent.*
2.	*Imperfect.*	Que j' allasse, allasses, allât; allassions, allassiez, allassent.

The compound tenses of *aller* are conjugated with *être*; as, *Je suis allé, j' étais allé*, &c.

The Imperative *va* takes *s* when followed by *y* or *en*.

395. REMARK.—*Je fus, j' ai été, j' avais été, j' aurais été*, are sometimes used instead of *j' allai, je suis allé, j' étais allé, je serais allé*, when the idea is conveyed that one has gone to, but returned from the place, which idea *aller* does not convey; as, *il a été à Paris*, means, that he went to Paris and has returned; but, *il est allé à Paris*, means, that he has gone to Paris and is still there.

S' EN ALLER, to go away.

396. INFINITIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
S' en aller, *to go away.*	S' en être allé, *to have gone away.*

Participle Present.	*Compound of the Participle Present.*
S' en allant, *going away.*	S'en étant allé, *having gone away.*

Participle Past.—En allé, *gone away.*

INDICATIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Je m' en vais,		Je m' en suis allé,	
Tu t' en vas,		Tu t' en es allé,	
Il s' en va,		Il s' en est allé,	
Nous nous en allons,		Nous nous en sommes allés,	
Vous vous en allez,	*—I go, am going, etc.*	Vous vous en êtes allés.	*—I have gone away, etc.*
Ils s'en vont,		Ils s' en sont allés,	

Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
Je m' en allais,		Je m' en étais allé,	
Tu t' en allais,		Tu t' en étais allé,	
Il s' en allait,	*I was going away, &c.*	Il s' en était allé,	*I had gone away, &c.*
Nous nous en allions,		Nous nous en étions allés,	
Vous vous en alliez,		Vous vous en étiez allés,	
Ils s' en allaient,		Ils s' en étaient allés,	

Perfect.		*Compound of the Perfect.*	
Je m' en allai,		Je m' en fus allé,	
Tu t' en allas,		Tu t' en fus allé,	
Il s' en alla,	*I went away, &c.*	Il s' en fut allé,	*I had gone away, &c.*
Nous nous en allâmes,		Nous nous en fûmes allés,	
Vous vous en allâtes,		Vous vous en fûtes allés,	
Ils s' en allèrent,		Ils s' en furent allés,	

Future.		*Compound of the Future.*	
Je m' en irai,		Je m' en serai allé,	
Tu t' en iras,		Tu t' en seras allé,	
Il s' en ira,	*I shall go away, &c.*	Il s' en sera allé,	*I shall have gone away, &c.*
Nous nous en irons,		Nous nous en serons allés,	
Vous vous en irez,		Vous vous en serez allés,	
Ils s' en iront,		Ils s' en seront allés,	

CONDITIONAL.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Je m' en irais,		Je m' en serais allé,	
Tu t' en irais,		Tu t' en serais allé,	
Il s' en irait,	*I should go away, &c.*	Il s' en serait allé,	*I should have gone away, &c.*
Nous nous en irions,		Nous nous en serions allés,	
Vous vous en iriez,		Vous vous en seriez allés,	
Ils s' en iraient,		Ils s' en seraient allés,	

IMPERATIVE.

Va-t' en,	*Go (thou) away.*
Qu' il s' en aille,	*Let him go away.*
Allons-nous-en,	*Let us go away.*
Allez-vous-en,	*Go (you) away.*
Qu' ils s' en aillent,	*Let them go away.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
Que je m' en aille,		Que je m' en sois allé,	
Que tu t' en ailles,		Que tu t' en sois allé,	
Qu' il s' en aille,		Qu' il s' en soit allé,	
Que nous nous en allions,	*That I may go away, &c.*	Que nous nous en soyons allés,	*That I may have gone away, &c.*
Que vous vous en alliez,		Que vous vous en soyez allés,	
Qu' ils s' en aillent,		Qu' ils s' en soient allés,	

Imperfect.		*Compound of the Imperfect.*	
Que je m' en allasse,	*That I might go away, &c.*	Que je m' en fusse allé,	*That I might have gone away, &c.*
Que tu t' en allasses,		Que tu t' en fusses allé,	
Qu' il s' en allât,		Qu' il s' en fût allé,	
Que nous nous en allassions,		Que nous nous en fussions allés,	
Que vous vous en allassiez,		Que vous vous en fussiez allés,	
Qu' ils s' en allassent,		Qu' ils s' en fussent allés,	

S' EN ALLER CONJUGATED NEGATIVELY.

397.

INDICATIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Je ne m' en vais pas,	Je ne m' en suis pas allé,
I do not go away, &c.	*I have not gone away*, &c.
Tu ne t' en vas pas,	Tu ne t' en es pas allé,
Il ne s' en va pas,	Il ne s' en est pas allé,
Nous ne nous en allons pas,	Nous ne nous en sommes pas allés,
Vous ne vous en allez pas,	Vous ne vous en êtes pas allés,
Ils ne s' en vont pas.	Ils ne s' en sont pas allés.

Imperfect.	*Compound of the Imperfect.*
Je ne m' en allais pas, &c.,	Je ne m' en étais pas allé, &c.,
I was not going away, &c.	*I had not gone away*, &c.

Perfect.	*Compound of the Perfect.*
Je ne m' en allai pas, &c.,	Je ne m' en fus pas allé, &c.,
I did not go away, &c.	*I had not gone away*, &c.

Future.	*Compound of the Future.*
Je ne m' en irai pas, &c.,	Je ne m' en serai pas allé, &c.,
I shall not go away, &c.	*I shall not have gone away*, &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Je ne m' en irais pas, &c.,	Je ne m' en serais pas allé, &c.,
I should not go away, &c.	*I should not have gone away*, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

Ne t' en va pas,	*Do not go away.*
Qu' il ne s' en aille pas,	*Let him not go away.*
Ne nous en allons pas,	*Let us not go away.*
Ne vous en allez pas,	*Do not go away.*
Qu' ils ne s' en aillent pas,	*Let them not go away.*

SUBJUNCTIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Que je ne m' en aille pas, &c.,	Que je ne m' en sois pas allé, &c.,
That I may not go away, &c.	*That I may not have gone away, &c.*

Imperfect.	*Compound of the Imperfect.*
Que je ne m' en allasse pas, &c.,	Que je ne m' en fusse pas allé, &c.,
That I might not go away, &c.	*That I might not have gone away, &c.*

S' EN ALLER CONJUGATED INTERROGATIVELY.

398. INDICATIVE.

Present.		*Compound of the Present.*	
M' en vais-je?	*Do I go away? &c.*	M' en suis-je allé?	*Have I gone away? &c.*
T' en vas-tu?		T' en es-tu allé?	
S' en va-t-il?		S' en est-il allé?	
Nous en allons-nous?		Nous en sommes-nous allés?	
Vous en allez-vous?		Vous en êtes-vous allés?	
S' en vont-ils?		S' en sont-ils allés?	

Imperfect.	*Compound of the Imperfect.*
M' en allais-je? &c.,	M' en étais-je allé? &c.,
Was I going away? &c.	*Had I gone away? &c.*

Perfect.	*Compound of the Perfect.*
M' en allai-je? &c.,	M' en fus-je allé? &c.,
Did I go away? &c.	*Had I gone away? &c.*

Future.	*Compound of the Future.*
M' en irai-je? &c.,	M' en serai-je allé? &c.,
Shall I go away? &c.	*Shall I have gone away? &c.*

CONDITIONAL.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
M' en irais-je? &c.,	M' en serais-je allé? &c.,
Should I go away? &c.	*Should I have gone away? &c.*

S' EN ALLER CONJUGATED INTERROGATIVELY AND NEGATIVELY.

399. INDICATIVE.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Ne m' en vais-je pas?	Ne m' en suis-je pas allé?
Do I not go away? &c.	*Have I not gone away? &c.*
Ne t' en vas-tu pas?	Ne t' en es-tu pas allé?
Ne s' en va-t-il pas?	Ne s' en est-il pas allé?
Ne nous en allons-nous pas?	Ne nous en sommes-nous pas allés?
Ne vous en allez-vous pas?	Ne vous en êtes-vous pas allés?
Ne s' en vont-ils pas?	Ne s' en sont-ils pas allés?

Imperfect.	*Compound of the Imperfect.*
Ne m'en allais-je pas? &c.,	Ne m'en étais-je pas allé? &c.,
Was I not going away? &c.	*Had I not gone away?* &c.

Perfect.	*Compound of the Perfect.*
Ne m'en allai-je pas? &c.,	Ne m'en fus-je pas allé? &c.,
Did I not go away? &c.	*Had I not gone away?* &c.

Future.	*Compound of the Future.*
Ne m' en irai-je pas? &c.,	Ne m'en serai-je pas allé? &c.,
Shall I not go away? &c.	*Shall I not have gone away?* &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.	*Compound of the Present.*
Ne m' en irais-je pas? &c.,	Ne m'en serais-je pas allé? &c.,
Should I not go away? &c.	*Should I not have gone away?* &c.

400. *ENVOYER, to Send.*

This verb is regular, except in the *Future* and *Conditional*, where it has :—

Future. J' enverrai, enverras, enverra; enverrons, enverrez, enverront.

Conditional. J' enverrais, enverrais, enverrait; enverrions, enverriez, enverraient.

Conjugate in the same manner :—Renvoyer, *to send back.*

II. IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

401. *ASSAILLIR, to Assault.*

Participle Present.—Assaillant. | *Participle Past.*—Assailli.

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Assaillir, Assaillant, Assailli, Assaille, Assaillis.)

1. J' assaille, assailles, assaille ; assaillons, assaillez, assaillent.
2. J' assaillais, assaillais, assaillait ; assaillions, assailliez, assaillaient.
3. J' assaillis, assaillis, assaillit ; assaillîmes, assaillîtes, assaillirent.
4. J' assaillirai, assailliras, assaillira ; assaillirons, assaillirez, assailliront.
1. J' assaillirais, assaillirais, assaillirait ; assaillirions, assailliriez, assailliraient.

1. Assaille, qu' il assaille ; assaillons, assaillez, qu' ils assaillent.
1. Que j' assaille, assailles, assaille ; assaillions, assailliez, assaillent.
2. Que j' assaillisse, assaillisses, assaillît ; assaillissions, assaillissiez, assaillissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—Tressaillir, *to start.*

402. *BOUILLIR, to Boil.*

Participle Present.—Bouillant. | *Participle Past.*—Bouilli.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Bouillir, Bouillant, Bouilli, Bous, Bouillis.)

1. Je bous, bous, bout ; bouillons, bouillez, bouillent.
2. Je bouillais, bouillais, bouillait ; bouillions, bouilliez, bouillaient.
3. Je bouillis, bouillis, bouillit ; bouillîmes, bouillîtes, bouillirent.
4. Je bouillirai, bouilliras, bouillira ; bouillirons, bouillirez, bouilliront.
1. Je bouillirais, bouillirais, bouillirait ; bouillirions, bouilliriez, bouilliraient.
1. Bous, qu' il bouille ; bouillons, bouillez, qu' ils bouillent.
1. Que je bouille, bouilles, bouille ; bouillions, bouilliez, bouillent.
2. Que je bouillisse, bouillisses, bouillît ; bouillissions, bouillissiez, bouillissent.

The above verb is used generally only in the third persons singular and plural. *Faire bouillir*, is used when *to boil* has a noun or a pronoun for its object ; as,

L' eau bout.	*The water boils.*
Je fais, je faisais bouillir de la viande.	*I boil, I was boiling some meat.*

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Rebouillir, *to boil again.* Ébouillir, *to boil away.*

403. *COURIR, to Run.*

Participle Present.—Courant. | *Participle Past.*—Couru.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Courir, Courant, Couru, Cours, Courus.)

1. Je cours, cours, court ; courons, courez, courent.
2. Je courais, courais, courait ; courions, couriez, couraient.

3. Je courus, courus, courut ; courûmes, courûtes, coururent.
4. Je courrai, courras, courra ; courrons, courrez, courront.
1. Je courrais, courrais, courrait ; courrions, courriez, courraient.
1. Cours, qu' il coure ; courons, courez, qu' ils courent.
1. Que je coure, coures, coure ; courions, couriez, courent.
2. Que je courusse, courusses, courût ; courussions, courussiez, courussent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Accourir, *to run to.*	Encourir, *to incur.*
Concourir, *to concur.*	Parcourir, *to run over.*
Discourir, *to discourse.*	Secourir, *to relieve.*

404. *DORMIR, to Sleep.*

Participle Present.—Dormant. | *Participle Past.*—Dormi.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Dormir, Dormant, Dormi, Dors, Dormis.)

1. Je dors, dors, dort ; dormons, dormez, dorment.
2. Je dormais, dormais, dormait ; dormions, dormiez, dormaient.
3. Je dormis, dormis, dormit ; dormîmes, dormîtes, dormirent.
4. Je dormirai, dormiras, dormira ; dormirons, dormirez, dormiront.
1. Je dormirais, dormirais, dormirait ; dormirions, dormiriez, dormiraient.
1. Dors, qu' il dorme ; dormons, dormez, qu' ils dorment.
1. Que je dorme, dormes, dorme ; dormions, dormiez, dorment.
2. Que je dormisse, dormisses, dormît ; dormissions, dormissiez, dormissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Endormir, *to lull asleep.*	Rendormir, *to make one sleep again.*
S' endormir, *to fall asleep.*	

405. *FUIR, to Fly.*

Participle Present.—Fuyant. | *Participle Past.*—Fui.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Fuir, Fuyant, Fui, Fuis, Fuis.)

1. Je fuis, fuis, fuit ; fuyons, fuyez, fuient.
2. Je fuyais, fuyais, fuyait ; fuyions, fuyiez, fuyaient.

3. Je fuis, fuis, fuit ; fuîmes, fuîtes, fuirent.
4. Je fuirai, fuiras, fuira ; fuirons, fuirez, fuiront.
1. Je fuirais, fuirais, fuirait ; fuirions, fuiriez, fuiraient.
1. Fuis, qu' il fuie ; fuyons, fuyez, qu' ils fuient.
1. Que je fuie, fuies, fuie ; fuyions, fuyiez, fuient.
2. Que je fuisse, fuisses, fuît ; fuissions, fuissiez, fuissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—S' enfuir, *to run away.*

406. *HAÏR, to Hate.*

Participle Present.—Haïssant. | *Participle Past.*—Haï.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Haïr, Haïssant, Haï, Hais, Haïs.)

1. Je *hais, hais, hait ;* haïssons, haïssez, haïssent.
2. Je haïssais, haïssais, haïssait ; haïssions, haïssiez, haïssaient.
3. Je haïs, haïs, haït ; haïmes, haïtes, haïrent.
4. Je haïrai, haïras, haïra ; haïrons, haïrez, haïront.
1. Je haïrais, haïrais, haïrait ; haïrions, haïriez, haïraient.
1. *Hais,* qu' il haïsse ; haïssons, haïssez, qu' ils haïssent.
1. Qu' je haïsse, haïsses, haïsse ; haïssions, haïssiez, haïssent.
2. Qe je haïsse, haïsses, haït ; haïssions, haïssiez, haïssent.

Observe that the three persons singular of the present of the Indicative, and the second person singular of the Imperative, have no diæresis (··) over the *i*, and have therefore to be pronounced *Je hé, tu hé, il hé ; hé.* Whereas, in all the other persons and tenses, the *i* is to be pronounced separately.

The *h* in this verb is aspirate.

407. *OUVRIR, to Open.*

Participle Present.—Ouvrant. | *Participle Past.*—Ouvert.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Ouvrir, Ouvrant, Ouvert, Ouvre, Ouvris.)

1. J' ouvre, ouvres, ouvre ; ouvrons, ouvrez, ouvrent.
2. J'ouvrais, ouvrais, ouvrait; ouvrions, ouvriez, ouvraient.
3. J' ouvris, ouvris, ouvrit ; ouvrîmes, ouvrîtes, ouvrirent.
4. J' ouvrirai, ouvriras, ouvrira ; ouvrirons, ouvrirez, ouvriront.
1. J' ouvrirais, ouvrirais, ouvrirait ; ouvririons, ouvririez, ouvriraient.
1. Ouvre, qu' il ouvre ; ouvrons, ouvrez, qu' ils ouvrent.

1. Que j' ouvre, ouvres, ouvre ; ouvrions, ouvriez, ouvrent.
2. Que j' ouvrisse, ouvrisses, ouvrît ; ouvrissions, ouvrissiez, ouvrissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Couvrir,	*to cover.*	Recouvrir,	*to cover again.*
Découvrir,	*to discover.*	Rouvrir,	*to open again.*
Offrir,	*to offer.*	Souffrir,	*to suffer.*

408. *PARTIR, to Set out.*

Participle Present.—Partant. | *Participle Past.*—Parti.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Partir, Partant, Parti, Pars, Partis.)

1. Je pars, pars, part ; partons, partez, partent.
2. Je partais, partais, partait ; partions, partiez, partaient.
3. Je partis, partis, partit ; partîmes, partîtes, partirent.
4. Je partirai, partiras, partira ; partirons, partirez, partiront.
1. Je partirais, partirais, partirait ; partirions, partiriez, partiraient.
1. Pars, qu' il parte ; partons, partez, qu' ils partent.
1. Que je parte, partes, parte ; partions, partiez, partent.
2. Que je partisse, partisses, partît ; partissions, partissiez, partissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—Repartir, *to set out again, to reply.*

Répartir, *to divide*, is regular, like *finir.*

409. *SENTIR, to Feel, to Smell.*

Participle Present.—Sentant. | *Participle Past.*—Senti.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Sentir, Sentant, Senti, Sens, Sentis.)

1. Je sens, sens, sent ; sentons, sentez, sentent.
2. Je sentais, sentais, sentait ; sentions, sentiez, sentaient.
3. Je sentis, sentis, sentit ; sentîmes, sentîtes, sentirent.
4. Je sentirai, sentiras, sentira ; sentirons, sentirez, sentiront.
1. Je sentirais, sentirais, sentirait ; sentirions, sentiriez, sentiraient.
1. Sens, qu' il sente ; sentons, sentez, qu' ils sentent.
1. Que je sente, sentes, sente ; sentions, sentiez, sentent.
2. Que je sentisse, sentisses, sentît ; sentissions, sentissiez, sentissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Consentir,	*to consent.*	Pressentir,	*to foreboda.*
Démentir,	*to contradict.*	Ressentir,	*to resent.*
Mentir,	*to lie.*	Se repentir,	*to repent.*

410. *SERVIR, to Serve.*

Participle Present.—Servant. | *Participle Past.*—Servi.

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Servir, Servant, Servi, Sers, Servis.)

1. Je sers, sers, sert ; servons, servez, servent.
2. Je servais, servais, servait ; servions, serviez, servaient.
3. Je servis, servis, servit ; servîmes, servîtes, servirent.
4. Je servirai, serviras, servira ; servirons, servirez, serviront.
1. Je servirais, servirais, servirait ; servirions, serviriez, serviraient.
1. Sers, qu' il serve ; servons, servez, qu' ils servent.
1. Que je serve, serves, serve ; servions, serviez, servent.
2. Que je servisse, servisses, servît ; servissions, servissiez, servissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—Desservir, *to clear the table.*

Asservir, *to enslave*, is regular, like *finir.*

411. *SORTIR, to Go out.*

Participle Present.—Sortant. | *Participle Past.*—Sorti.

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Sortir, Sortant, Sorti, Sors, Sortis.)

1. Je sors, sors, sort ; sortons, sortez, sortent.
2. Je sortais, sortais, sortait ; sortions, sortiez, sortaient.
3. Je sortis, sortis, sortit ; sortîmes, sortîtes, sortirent.
4. Je sortirai, sortiras, sortira ; sortirons, sortirez, sortiront.
1. Je sortirais, sortirais, sortirait ; sortirions, sortiriez, sortiraient.
1. Sors, qu' il sorte ; sortons, sortez, qu' ils sortent.
1. Que je sorte, sortes, sorte ; sortions, sortiez, sortent.
2. Que je sortisse, sortisses, sortît ; sortissions, sortissiez, sortissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—Ressortir, *to go out again.*

412. *VÊTIR, to Clothe.*

Participle Present.—Vêtant. | *Participle Past.*—Vêtu.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Vêtir, Vêtant, Vêtu, Vêts, Vêtis.)

1. Je vêts, vêts, vêt ; vêtons, vêtez, vêtent.
2. Je vêtais, vêtais, vêtait ; vêtions, vêtiez, vêtaient.
3. Je vêtis, vêtis, vêtit ; vêtîmes, vêtîtes, vêtirent.
4. Je vêtirai, vêtiras, vêtira ; vêtirons, vêtirez, vêtiront.
1. Je vêtirais, vêtirais, vêtirait ; vêtirions, vêtiriez, vêtiraient.
1. Vêts, qu' il vête ; vêtons, vêtez, qu' ils vêtent.
1. Que je vête, vêtes, vête ; vêtions, vêtiez, vêtent.
2. Que je vêtisse, vêtisses, vêtît ; vêtissions, vêtissiez, vêtissent.

Vêtir is most frequently reflected, and then means *to dress one's self.*

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Dévêtir, *to undress.* | Revêtir, *to invest.*

Verbs whose tenses cannot be formed regularly from the Primitive.

413. *ACQUÉRIR, to Acquire.*

Participle Present.—Acquérant. | *Participle Past.*—Acquis.

1. J' acquiers, acquiers, acquiert ; acquérons, acquérez, *acquièrent.*
2. J' acquérais, acquérais, acquérait ; acquérions, acquériez, acquéraient.
3. J' acquis, acquis, acquit ; acquîmes, acquîtes, acquirent.
4. J' acquerrai, acquerras, acquerra ; acquerrons, acquerrez, acquerront.
1. J' acquerrais, acquerrais, acquerrait ; acquerrions, acquerriez, acquerraient.
1. Acquiers, qu' il acquière ; acquérons, acquérez, qu' ils acquièrent.
1. Que j' acquière, acquières, acquière ; acquérions, acquériez, acquièrent.
2. Que j' acquisse, acquisses, acquît ; acquissions, acquissiez, acquissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Conquérir, *to conquer.* | S' enquérir, *to enquire.*
Requérir, *to request.* |

Conquérir is seldom used but in the *Infinitive present*, the *Perfect*, the *Imperfect of the Subjunctive*, and the *Compound Tenses*.

S' enquérir is seldom used but in the *Infinitive* and the *Compound Tenses*.

Querir, *to fetch*, is used after *aller, envoyer, venir*.

414. *CUEILLIR, to Gather.*

Participle Present.—Cueillant. | *Participle Past.*—Cueilli.

1. Je cueille, cueilles, cueille; cueillons, cueillez, cueillent.
2. Je cueillais, cueillais, cueillait; cueillions, cueilliez, cueillaient.
3. Je cueillis, cueillis, cueillit; cueillîmes, cueillîtes, cueillirent.
4. Je cueillerai, cueilleras, cueillera; cueillerons, cueillerez, cueilleront.
1. Je cueillerais, cueillerais, cueillerait; cueillerions, cueilleriez, cueilleraient.
1. Cueille, qu'il cueille; cueillons, cueillez, qu'ils cueillent.
1. Que je cueille, cueilles, cueille; cueillions, cueilliez, cueillent.
2. Que je cueillisse, cueillisses, cueillît; cueillissions, cueillissiez, cueillissent.

Conjugate in the same manner:—

Accueillir, *to receive.* | Recueillir, *to collect.*

415. *MOURIR, to Die.*

Participle Present.—Mourant. | *Participle Past.*—Mort.

1. Je meurs, meurs, meurt; mourons, mourez, meurent.
2. Je mourais, mourais, mourait; mourions, mouriez, mouraient.
3. Je mourus, mourus, mourut; mourûmes, mourûtes, moururent.
4. Je mourrai, mourras, mourra; mourrons, mourrez, mourront.
1. Je mourrais, mourrais, mourrait; mourrions, mourriez, mourraient.
1. Meurs, qu' il meure; mourons, mourez, qu' ils meurent.

1. Que je meure, meures, meure; mourions, mouriez, meurent.
2. Que je mourusse, mourusses, mourût; mourussions, mourussiez, mourussent.

This verb is conjugated with *être* in the compound tenses.

416. *TENIR, to Keep, to Hold.*

Participle Present.—Tenant. | *Participle Past.*—Tenu.

1. Je tiens, tiens, tient; tenons, tenez, *tiennent.*
2. Je tenais, tenais, tenait; tenions, teniez, tenaient.
3. Je tins, tins, tint; tînmes, tîntes, tinrent.
4. Je *tiendrai, tiendras, tiendra; tiendrons, tiendrez, tiendront.*
1. Je *tiendrais, tiendrais, tiendrait; tiendrions, tiendriez, tiendraient.*
1. Tiens, qu' il *tienne*; tenons, tenez, qu' ils *tiennent.*
1. Que je *tienne, tiennes, tienne*; tenions, teniez, *tiennent.*
2. Que je tinsse, tinsses, tînt; tinssions, tinssiez, tinssent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

S' abstenir,	*to abstain.*	Maintenir,	*to maintain.*
Appartenir,	*to belong.*	Obtenir,	*to obtain.*
Contenir,	*to contain.*	Retenir,	*to retain.*
Entretenir,	*to keep up, to converse.*	Soutenir,	*to sustain.*

417. *VENIR, to Come.*

Participle Present.—Venant. | *Participle Past.*—Venu.

1. Je viens, viens, vient; venons, venez, *viennent.*
2. Je venais, venais, venait; venions, veniez, venaient.
3. Je vins, vins, vint; vînmes, vîntes, vinrent.
4. Je *viendrai, viendras, viendra; viendrons, viendrez, viendront.*
1. Je *viendrais, viendrais, viendrait*; *viendrions, viendriez, viendraient.*
1. Viens, qu' il *vienne*; venons, venez, qu' ils *viennent.*
1. Que je *vienne, viennes, vienne*; venions, veniez, *viennent.*
2. Que je vinsse, vinsses, vînt; vinssions, vinssiez, vinssent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Convenir,	*to agree, to suit.*	Se ressouvenir,	*to recollect.*
Devenir,	*to become.*	Revenir,	*to come back.*
Disconvenir,	*to disagree.*	Se souvenir,	*to remember.*
Intervenir,	*to intervene.*	Subvenir,	*to assist.*
Parvenir,	*to reach.*	Survenir,	*to come unexpectedly.*
Prévenir,	*to anticipate, to prevent.*		

Venir takes the auxiliary *être* in its compound tenses; but *prévenir* and *subvenir* take the auxiliary *avoir*. *Convenir* takes *être* when it means *to agree*, but *avoir* when it means *to suit*.

418. *FAILLIR, to Fail.*

Participle Past.—Failli.

Perfect. Je faillis, tu faillis, il faillit; nous faillîmes, vous faillîtes, ils faillirent.

This verb is not used in any of the other simple tenses.

Compound Tenses.—J' ai failli, J' avais failli, &c.

419. *DÉFAILLIR, to Fail, to Faint.*

Participle Past.—Défailli.

IND. *Pres.* Nous défaillons, ils défaillent.
Imperfect. Je défaillais, tu défaillais, il défaillait; nous défaillions, vous défailliez, ils défaillaient.
Perfect. Je défaillis, tu défaillis, il défaillit; nous défaillîmes, vous défaillîtes, ils défaillirent.
Compound Tenses.—J' ai défailli, j' avais défailli, &c.

420. *GÉSIR, to Lie, to Lie down.*

Participle Present.—Gisant.

IND. *Pres.* Il gît; nous gisons, vous gisez, ils gisent.
Imperfect. Je gisais, tu gisais, il gisait; nous gisions, vous gisiez, ils gisaient.
Ci-gît (here lies) is used in epitaphs.

421. *BÉNIR, to Bless.*

This verb is conjugated like *finir*, but makes in the *past participle*, BÉNIT (m.), BÉNITE (f.), when speaking of things consecrated by a religious ceremony; as, *de l' eau bénite*, holy water.

422. *OUÏR, to Hear.*

Participle Past.—Ouï.

This verb is only used in the *Perfect of the Indicative* (j' ouïs), and in the *Imperfect of the Subjunctive* (que j' ouïsse), but chiefly in the *compound tenses*, when it is usually followed by another verb in the Infinitive; as, *j' ai ouï dire*, I have heard say.

FLEURIR, *to flower*, is regular, like *finir*; but when it is used in a *figurative* sense it makes in the Present Participle *florissant*, in the Imperfect of the Indicative *il florissait, ils florissaient.*

III. IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

423. *POURVOIR, to Provide.*

Participle Present.—Pourvoyant. | *Participle Past.*—Pourvu.

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Pourvoir, Pourvoyant, Pourvu, Pourvois, Pourvus.)

1. Je pourvois, pourvois, pourvoit; pourvoyons, pourvoyez, pourvoient.
2. Je pourvoyais, pourvoyais, pourvoyait; pourvoyions, pourvoyiez, pourvoyaient.
3. Je pourvus, pourvus, pourvut; pourvûmes, pourvûtes, pourvurent.
4. Je pourvoirai, pourvoiras, pourvoira; pourvoirons, pourvoirez, pourvoiront.
1. Je pourvoirais, pourvoirais, pourvoirait; pourvoirions, pourvoiriez, pourvoiraient.
1. Pourvois, qu' il pourvoie; pourvoyons, pourvoyez, qu' ils pourvoient.
1. Que je pourvoie, pourvoies, pourvoie; pourvoyions, pourvoyiez, pourvoient.
2. Que je pourvusse, pourvusses, pourvût; pourvussions, pourvussiez, pourvussent.

424. *PRÉVOIR, to Foresee.*

Participle Present.—Prévoyant. | *Participle Past.*—Prévu.

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Prévoir, Prévoyant, Prévu, Prévois, Previs.)

1. Je prévois, prévois, prévoit ; prévoyons, prévoyez, prévoient.
2. Je prévoyais, prévoyais, prévoyait ; prévoyions, prévoyiez, prévoyaient.
3. Je prévis, prévis, prévit ; prévîmes, prévîtes, prévirent.
4. Je prévoirai, prévoiras, prévoira ; prévoirons, prévoirez, prévoiront.
1. Je prévoirais, prévoirais, prévoirait ; prévoirions, prévoiriez, prévoiraient.
1. Prévois, qu' il prévoie ; prévoyons, prévoyez, qu' ils prévoient.
1. Que je prévoie, prévoies, prévoie ; prévoyions, prévoyiez, prévoient.
2. Que je prévisse, prévisses, prévît ; prévissions, prévissiez, prévissent.

Surseoir, *to put off* (an expression used in Law), is conjugated like *prévoir*, but has in the past participle *sursis*.

Verbs whose tenses cannot be formed regularly from the Primitive.

425. *S'ASSEOIR, to Sit down, to Seat one's self.*

Participle Present.—S'asseyant. | *Participle Past.*—Assis.

1. Je m'assieds, t'assieds, s'assied ; asseyons, asseyez, s'asseient.
2. Je m'asseyais, t'asseyais, s'asseyait ; asseyions, asseyiez, s'asseyaient.
3. Je m'assis, t'assis, s'assit ; assîmes, assîtes, s'assirent.
4. Je m'*assiérai*, t'*assiéras*, s'*assiéra* ; *assiérons*, *assiérez*, s'*assiéront*.
1. Je m'*assiérais*, t'*assiérais*, s'*assiérait* ; *assiérions*, *assiériez*, s'*assiéraient*.
1. Assieds-toi, qu' il s'asseie ; asseyons-nous, asseyez-vous, qu' ils s'asseient.
1. Que je m'asseie, t'asseies, s'asseie ; asseyions, asseyiez, s'asseient.
2. Que je m'assisse, t'assisses, s'assît ; assissions, assissiez, s'assissent.

Conjugate in the same manner:—

Rasseoir, *to set again, to sit down again, to calm.*

426. *MOUVOIR, to Move.*

Participle Present.—Mouvant. | *Participle Past.*—Mu.

1. Je meus, meus, meut ; mouvons, mouvez, meuvent.
2. Je mouvais, mouvais, mouvait ; mouvions, mouviez, mouvaient.
3. Je mus, mus, mut ; mûmes, mûtes, murent.
4. Je mouvrai, mouvras, mouvra ; mouvrons, mouvrez, mouvront.
1. Je mouvrais, mouvrais, mouvrait ; mouvrions, mouvriez, mouvraient.
1. Meus, qu' il meuve ; mouvons, mouvez, qu' ils meuvent.
1. Que je meuve, meuves, meuve ; mouvions, mouviez, meuvent.
2. Que je musse, musses, mût ; mussions, mussiez, mussent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Émouvoir, *to stir up, to move.* | Promouvoir, *to promote.*

427. *POUVOIR, to be Able.*

Participle Present.—Pouvant. | *Participle Past.*—Pu.

1. Je puis *or* Je peux, peux, peut ; pouvons, pouvez, peuvent.
2. Je pouvais, pouvais, pouvait ; pouvions, pouviez, pouvaient.
3. Je pus, pus, put ; pûmes, pûtes, purent.
4. Je *pourrai, pourras, pourra ; pourrons, pourrez, pourront.*
1. Je *pourrais, pourrais, pourrait ; pourrions, pourriez, pourraient.*
1. No Imperative.
1. Que je *puisse, puisses, puisse ; puissions, puissiez, puissent.*
2. Que je pusse, pusses, pût ; pussions, pussiez, pussent.

Although written with two r's, only one *r* is pronounced in the future and conditional.

In the Present of the Indicative, *je puis* is more used than *je peux.* In the Interrogative, *puis-je* is always used.

428. *SAVOIR, to Know (by the mind).*

Participle Present.—Sachant. | *Participle Past.*—Su.

1. Je sais, sais, sait ; *savons, savez, savent.*
2. Je *savais, savais, savait ; savions, saviez, savaient.*
3. Je sus, sus, sut ; sûmes, sûtes, surent.
4. Je *saurai, sauras, saura ; saurons, saurez, sauront.*
1. Je *saurais, saurais, saurait ; saurions, sauriez, sauraient.*
1. SACHE, qu' il sache ; sachons, sachez, qu' ils sachent.
1. Que je sache, saches, sache ; sachions, sachiez, sachent.
2. Que je susse, susses, sût ; sussions, sussiez, sussent.

The verb *savoir* must not be confounded with *connaître*—*Je connais quelqu' un*, I know some one ; *Je sais quelque chose*, I know something (by the mind).

429. *Je ne saurais* is frequently used for *je ne puis ;* as, *Je ne saurais vous dire*, I cannot tell you.

430. *VALOIR, to be Worth.*

Participle Present.—Valant. | *Participle Past.*—Valu.

1. Je vaux, vaux, vaut ; valons, valez, valent.
2. Je valais, valais, valait ; valions, valiez, valaient.
3. Je valus, valus, valut ; valûmes, valûtes, valurent.
4. Je *vaudrai, vaudras, vaudra ; vaudrons, vaudrez, vaudront.*
1. Je *vaudrais, vaudrais, vaudrait ; vaudrions, vaudriez, vaudraient.*
1. Vaux, qu' il *vaille ;* valons, valez, qu' ils *vaillent.*
1. Que je *vaille, vailles, vaille ;* valions, valiez, *vaillent.*
2. Que je valusse, valusses, valût ; valussions, valussiez, valussent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Équivaloir, *to be equivalent.* | Revaloir, *to return like for like.*

431. PRÉVALOIR, *to prevail*, makes in the *Subjunctive Present*—Que je prévale, que tu prévales, &c.

432. *VOIR, to See.*

Participle Present.—Voyant. | *Participle Past.*—Vu.

1. Je vois, vois, voit ; voyons, voyez, voient.
2. Je voyais, voyais, voyait ; voyions, voyiez, voyaient.

3. Je vis, vis, vit ; vîmes, vîtes, virent.
4. Je verrai, verras, verra ; verrons, verrez, verront.
1. Je verrais, verrais, verrait ; verrions, verriez, verraient.
1. Vois, qu' il voie ; voyons, voyez, qu' ils voient.
1. Que je voie, voies, voie ; voyions, voyiez, voient.
2. Que je visse, visses, vît ; vissions, vissiez, vissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Entrevoir, *to have a glimpse of.* | Revoir, *to see again.*

433. *VOULOIR, to be Willing.*

Participle Present.—Voulant. | *Participle Past.*—Voulu.

1. Je veux, veux, veut ; voulons, voulez, veulent.
2. Je voulais, voulais, voulait ; voulions, vouliez, voulaient.
3. Je voulus, voulus, voulut ; voulûmes, voulûtes, voulurent.
4. Je *voudrai, voudras, voudra ; voudrons, voudrez, voudront.*
1. Je *voudrais; voudrais, voudrait ; voudrions, voudriez, voudraient.*
1. VEUILLEZ, *be so good as, be so kind as to.*
1. Que je *veuille, veuilles, veuille ;* voulions, vouliez, *veuillent.*
2. Que je voulusse, voulusses, voulût ; voulussions, voulussiez, voulussent.

434. *CHOIR, to Fall.*

Participle Past.—Chu, Chue.

This verb is almost exclusively used in poetry, and then only in the *Infinitive* and *Past Participle.*

435. *DÉCHOIR, to Decay, to Fall off.*

Past Participle.—Déchu.

This verb is seldom used except in the *Infinitive* and the *Past Participle.*

436. *ÉCHOIR, to Fall to, to be Due, to Expire.*

Participle Present.—Echéant. | *Participle Past.*—Échu, Échue.

IND. *Pres.* Il échoit, or échet.
Perfect. J' échus, échus, échut ; échûmes, échûtes, échurent.
Future. J' *écherrai, écherras, écherra ; écherrons, écherrez, écherront.*
COND. J' *écherrais, écherrais, écherrait ; écherrions, écherriez, écherraient.*
IMP. SUBJ. Que j' échusse, échusses, échût ; échussions, échussiez, échussent.

437. *RAVOIR, to Have again, to Get again.*

This verb is only used in the *Present of the Infinitive.*

438. *SEOIR, to Befit, to Become.*

Participle Present.—Seyant.

IND. *Pres.* Il sied ; ils *siéent.* | *Future.* Il *siéra* ; ils *siéront.*
Imperfect. Il seyait ; ils seyaient. | COND. Il *siérait* ; ils *siéraient.*

439. *SEOIR, to Sit.*

Participle Present.—Séant. | *Participle Past.*—Sis.

This verb is only used in the above parts. The Past Participle is used as an adjective in law, and signifies *situated.*

IV. IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION.

440. *ABSOUDRE, to Absolve.*

Participle Present.—Absolvant.
Participle Past.—Absous, *m.* ; absoute, *f.*
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Absoudre, Absolvant, Absous, Absous,——.)

1. J'absous, absous, absout ; absolvons, absolvez, absolvent.
2. J' absolvais, absolvais, absolvait ; absolvions, absolviez, absolvaient.
3. No Perfect.

4. J' absoudrai, absoudras, absoudra ; absoudrons, absoudrez, absoudront.
1. J' absoudrais, absoudrais, absoudrait ; absoudrions, absoudriez, absoudraient.
1. Absous, qu' il absolve ; absolvons, absolvez, qu' ils absolvent.
1. Que j' absolve, absolves, absolve ; absolvions, absolviez, absolvent.
2. No Imperfect Subjunctive.

Conjugate in the same manner :—dissoudre, *to dissolve.*

441. *BATTRE, to Beat.*

Participle Present.—Battant. | *Participle Past.*—Battu.

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Battre, Battant, Battu, Bats, Battis.)

1. Je bats, bats, bat ; battons, battez, battent.
2. Je battais, battais, battait ; battions, battiez, battaient.
3. Je battis, battis, battit ; battîmes, battîtes, battirent.
4. Je battrai, battras, battra ; battrons, battrez, battront.
1. Je battrais, battrais, battrait ; battrions, battriez, battraient.
1. Bats, qu' il batte ; battons, battez, qu' ils battent.
1. Que je batte, battes, batte ; battions, battiez, battent.
2. Que je battisse, battisses, battît ; battissions, battissiez, battissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Abattre,	*to pull down.*	Rabattre,	*to abate.*
Combattre,	*to fight.*	Rebattre,	*to beat again.*
Débattre,	*to debate.*	Se débattre,	*to struggle.*

442. *CONCLURE, to Conclude.*

Participle Present.—Concluant.

Participle Past.—Conclu, *m.* ; conclue, *f.*

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Conclure, Concluant, Conclu, Conclus, Conclus.)

1. Je conclus, conclus, conclut ; concluons, concluez, concluent.
2. Je concluais, concluais, concluait ; concluïons, concluïez, concluaient.
3. Je conclus, conclus, conclut ; conclûmes, conclûtes, conclurent.
4. Je conclurai, concluras, conclura ; conclurons, conclurez, concluront.

1. Je conclurais, conclurais, conclurait ; conclurions, concluriez, concluraient.
1. Conclus, qu' il conclue ; concluons, concluez, qu' ils concluent.
1. Que je conclue, conclues, conclue ; concluïons, concluïez, concluent.
2. Que je conclusse, conclusses, conclût ; conclussions, conclussiez, conclussent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—Exclure, *to exclude.*

443. *CONDUIRE, to Conduct, to Lead.*

Participle Present.—Conduisant.
Participle Past.—Conduit, *m.* ; conduite, *f.*
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Conduire, Conduisant, Conduit, Conduis, Conduisis.)

1. Je conduis, conduis, conduit ; conduisons, conduisez, conduisent.
2. Je conduisais, conduisais, conduisait ; conduisions, conduisiez, conduisaient.
3. Je conduisis, conduisis, conduisit ; conduisîmes, conduisîtes, conduisirent.
4. Je conduirai, conduiras, conduira ; conduirons, conduirez, conduiront.
1. Je conduirais, conduirais, conduirait ; conduirions, conduiriez, conduiraient.
1. Conduis, qu' il conduise ; conduisons, conduisez, qu' ils conduisent.
1. Que je conduise, conduises, conduise ; conduisions, conduisiez, conduisent.
2. Que je conduisisse, conduisisses, conduisît ; conduisissions, conduisissiez, conduisissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Construire,	*to construct.*	Introduire,	*to introduce.*
Cuire,	*to cook, to bake.*	Produire,	*to produce.*
Déduire,	*to deduct.*	Reconduire,	*to reconduct.*
Détruire,	*to destroy.*	Recuire,	*to cook again.*
Éconduire,	*to get rid of.*	Réduire,	*to reduce.*
Instruire,	*to instruct.*	Traduire,	*to translate.*

444. NUIRE, *to hurt*, is also conjugated in the same manner as *conduire* ; but its *past participle* is nui, and has *no feminine.*

445. *CONFIRE, to Preserve, to Pickle.*

Participle Present.—Confisant.
Participle Past.—Confit, *m.*; confite, *f.*
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Confire, Confisant, Confit, Confis, Confis.)

1. Je confis, confis, confit; confisons, confisez, confisent.
2. Je confisais, confisais, confisait; confisions, confisiez, confisaient.
3. Je confis, confis, confit; confîmes, confîtes, confirent.
4. Je confirai, confiras, confira; confirons, confirez, confiront.
1. Je confirais, confirais, confirait; confirions, confiriez, confiraient.
1. Confis, qu' il confise; confisons, confisez, qu' ils confisent.
1. Que je confise, confises, confise; confisions, confisiez, confisent.
2. Que je confisse, confisses, confît; confissions, confissiez, confissent.

446. SUFFIRE, *to suffice*, is conjugated like *confire*; but its *past participle* is *suffi*, and has no feminine.

447. *CONNAÎTRE, to Know (by the senses).*

Participle Present.—Connaissant. | *Participle Past.*—Connu.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Connaître, Connaissant, Connu, Connais, Connus.)

1. Je connais, connais, connaît; connaissons, connaissez, connaissent.
2. Je connaissais, connaissais, connaissait; connaissions, connaissiez, connaissaient.
3. Je connus, connus, connut; connûmes, connûtes, connurent.
4. Je connaîtrai, connaîtras, connaîtra; connaîtrons, connaîtrez, connaîtront.
1. Je connaîtrais, connaîtrais, connaîtrait; connaîtrions, connaîtriez, connaîtraient.
1. Connais, qu' il connaisse; connaissons, connaissez, qu' ils connaissent.
1. Que je connaisse, connaisses, qu' il connaisse; connaissions, connaissiez, qu' ils connaissent.
2. Que je connusse, connusses, connût; connussions, connussiez, connussent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Disparaître,	*to disappear.*	Reconnaître,	to *know again.*
Paraître,	*to appear.*	Reparaître,	to appear again.

448. *COUDRE, to Sew.*

Participle Present.—Cousant. | *Participle Past.*—Cousu.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Coudre, Cousant, Cousu, Couds, Cousis.)

1. Je couds, couds, coud ; cousons, cousez, cousent.
2. Je cousais, cousais, cousait ; cousions, cousiez, cousaient.
3. Je cousis, cousis, cousit ; cousîmes, cousîtes, cousirent.
4. Je coudrai, coudras, coudra ; coudrons, coudrez, coudront.
1. Je coudrais, coudrais, coudrait ; coudrions, coudriez, coudraient.
1. Couds, qu' il couse ; cousons, cousez, qu' ils cousent.
1. Que je couse, couses, couse ; cousions, cousiez, cousent.
2. Que je cousisse, cousisses, cousît ; cousissions, cousissiez, cousissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Découdre, *to unsew.* | Recoudre, *to sew again.*

449. *CRAINDRE, to Fear.*

Participle Present.—Craignant.
Participle Past.—Craint, *m.* ; Crainte, *f.*
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Craindre, Craignant, Craint, Crains, Craignis.)

1. Je crains, crains, craint ; craignons, craignez, craignent.
2. Je craignais, craignais, craignait ; craignions, craigniez, craignaient.
3. Je craignis, craignis, craignit ; craignîmes, craignîtes, craignirent.
4. Je craindrai, craindras, craindra ; craindrons, craindrez, craindront.
1. Je craindrais, craindrais, craindrait ; craindrions, craindriez, craindraient.
1. Crains, qu' il craigne ; craignons, craignez, qu' ils craignent.
1. Que je craigne, craignes, craigne ; craignions, craigniez, craignent.
2. Que je craignisse, craignisses, craignît ; craignissions, craignissiez, craignissent.

In the same manner are conjugated all verbs ending in *aindre* and *oindre* ; as,

Contraindre,	*to constrain.*	Oindre,	to anoint.
Joindre,	*to join.*	Plaindre,	to pity.

450. *CROIRE, to Believe.*

Participle Present.—Croyant. | *Participle Past.*—Cru, *m.*; Crue, *f.*

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Croire, Croyant, Cru, Crois, Crus.)

1. Je crois, crois, croit ; croyons, croyez, croient.
2. Je croyais, croyais, croyait ; croyions, croyiez, croyaient.
3. Je crus, crus, crut ; crûmes, crûtes, crurent.
4. Je croirai, croiras, croira ; croirons, croirez, croiront.
1. Je croirais, croirais, croirait ; croirions, croiriez, croiraient.
1. Crois, qu' il croie ; croyons, croyez, qu' ils croient.
1. Que je croie, croies, croie ; croyions, croyiez, croient.
2. Que je crusse, crusses, crût ; crussions, crussiez, crussent.

451. Accroire, *to believe*, is only used in the *Infinitive*; as, *faire accroire*, to make one believe.

452. *CROÎTRE, to Grow.*

Participle Present.—Croissant.

Participle Past.—Crû, *m.*; Crûe, *f.*

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Croître, Croissant, Crû, Crois, Crûs.)

1. Je crois, crois, croît ; croissons, croissez, croissent.
2. Je croissais, croissais, croissait ; croissions, croissiez, croissaient.
3. Je crûs, crûs, crût ; crûmes, crûtes, crûrent.
4. Je croîtrai, croîtras, croîtra ; croîtrons, croîtrez, croîtront.
1. Je croîtrais, croîtrais, croîtrait ; croîtrions, croîtriez, croîtraient.
1. Crois, qu' il croisse ; croissons, croissez, qu' ils croissent.
1. Que je croisse, croisses, croisse ; croissions, croissiez, croissent.
2. Que je crûsse, crûsses, crût ; crûssions, crûssiez, crûssent.

453. Accroître, *to increase*, and Décroître, *to decrease*, are conjugated like *croître* ; but the past participles of these verbs (*accru, décru*) do not take the circumflex accent.

454. *ÉCRIRE, to Write.*

Participle Present.—Écrivant. | *Participle Past.*—Écrit.

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Écrire, Écrivant, Écrit, Écris, Écrivis.)

1. J' écris, écris, écrit ; écrivons, écrivez, écrivent.
2. J' écrivais, écrivais, écrivait ; écrivions, écriviez, écrivaient.
3. J'écrivis, écrivis, écrivit ; écrivîmes, écrivîtes, écrivirent.
4. J' écrirai, écriras, écrira ; écrirons, écrirez, écriront.
1. J'écrirais, écrirais, écrirait ; écririons, écririez, écriraient.
1. Écris, qu' il écrive ; écrivons, écrivez, qu' ils écrivent.
1. Que j'écrive, écrives, écrive ; écrivions, écriviez, écrivent.
2. Que j' écrivisse, écrivisses, écrivît ; écrivissions, écrivissiez, écrivissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Circonscrire,	*to circumscribe.*	Proscrire,	*to proscribe.*
Décrire,	*to describe.*	Récrire,	*to write again.*
Inscrire,	*to inscribe.*	Souscrire,	*to subscribe.*
Prescrire,	*to prescribe.*	Transcrire,	*to transcribe.*

455. *LIRE, to Read.*

Participle Present.—Lisant. | *Participle Past.*—Lu.

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Lire, Lisant, Lu, Lis, Lus.)

1. Je lis, lis, lit ; lisons, lisez, lisent.
2. Je lisais, lisais, lisait ; lisions, lisiez, lisaient.
3. Je lus, lus, lut ; lûmes, lûtes, lurent.
4. Je lirai, liras, lira ; lirons, lirez, liront.
1. Je lirais, lirais, lirait ; lirions, liriez, liraient.
1. Lis, qu' il lise ; lisons, lisez, qu' ils lisent.
1. Que je lise, lises, lise ; lisions, lisiez, lisent.
2. Que je lusse, lusses, lût ; lussions, lussiez, lussent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Élire, *to elect.* | Relire, *to read again.*

456. *LUIRE, to Shine.*

Participle Present.—Luisant. | *Participle Past.*—Lui, *m.* (no fem.)

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Luire, Luisant, Lui, Luis, ——.)

1. Je luis, luis, luit ; luisons, luisez, luisent.
2. Je luisais, luisais, luisait ; luisions, luisiez, luisaient.
3. *No Perfect.*

4. Je luirai, luiras, luira ; luirons, luirez, luiront.
1. Je luirais, luirais, luirait ; luirions, luiriez, luiraient.
1. No Imperative.
1. Que je luise, luises, luise ; luisions, luisiez, luisent.
2. No Imperfect Subjunctive.

Conjugate in the same manner:—Reluire, *to shine, to glitter.*

457. *MÉDIRE, to Slander.*

Participle Present.—Médisant. | *Participle Past.*—Médit.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Médire, Médisant, Médit, Médis, Médis.)

1. Je médis, médis, médit ; médisons, médisez, médisent.
2. Je médisais, médisais, médisait ; médisions, médisiez, médisaient.
3. Je médis, médis, médit ; médîmes, médîtes, médirent.
4. Je médirai, médiras, médira ; médirons, médirez, médiront.
1. Je médirais, médirais, médirait ; médirions, médiriez, médiraient.
1. Médis, qu' il médise ; médisons, médisez, qu' ils médisent.
1. Que je médise, médises, médise ; médisions, médisiez, médisent.
2. Que je médisse, médisses, médît ; médissions, médissiez, médissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Contredire,	*to contradict.*	Interdire,	*to prohibit.*
Dédire,	*to disown.*	Prédire,	*to foretell.*

(For maudire see after *dire.*—476.)

458. *METTRE, to Put.*

Participle Present.—Mettant. | *Participle Past.*—Mis.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Mettre, Mettant, Mis, Mets, Mis.)

1. Je mets, mets, met ; mettons, mettez, mettent.
2. Je mettais, mettais, mettait ; mettions, mettiez, mettaient.
3. Je mis, mis, mit ; mîmes, mîtes, mirent.
4. Je mettrai, mettras, mettra ; mettrons, mettrez, mettront.
1. Je mettrais, mettrais, mettrait ; mettrions, mettriez, mettraient.

1. Mets, qu' il mette ; mettons, mettez, qu' ils mettent.
1. Que je mette, mettes, mette ; mettions, mettiez, mettent.
2. Que je misse, misses, mît ; missions, missiez, missent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Admettre,	*to admit.*	Omettre,	*to omit.*
Commettre,	*to commit.*	Permettre,	*to permit.*
Compromettre,	*to compromise.*	Promettre,	*to promise.*
Se démettre,	*to resign ; to put out of joint.*	Remettre,	*to put off.*
		Soumettre,	*to submit.*
S' entremettre,	*to interpose.*	Transmettre,	*to transmit.*

459. *MOUDRE, to Grind (corn, coffee, &c.).*

Participle Present.—Moulant. | *Participle Past.*—Moulu.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Moudre, Moulant, Moulu, Mouds, Moulus.)

1. Je mouds, mouds, moud ; moulons, moulez, moulent.
2. Je moulais, moulais, moulait ; moulions, mouliez, moulaient.
3. Je moulus, moulus, moulut ; moulûmes, moulûtes, moulurent.
4. Je moudrai, moudras, moudra ; moudrons, moudrez, moudront.
1. Je moudrais, moudrais, moudrait ; moudrions, moudriez, moudraient.
1. Mouds, qu' il moule ; moulons, moulez, qu' ils moulent.
1. Que je moule, moules, moule ; moulions, mouliez, moulent.
2. Que je moulusse, moulusses, moulût ; moulussions, moulussiez, moulussent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Émoudre,	*to grind (knives, razors, &c.).*	Rémoudre,	*to grind again (knives, &c.).*
Remoudre,	*to grind again (corn, &c.).*		

460. *NAÎTRE, to be Born.*

Participle Present.—Naissant. | *Participle Past.*—Né.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Naître, Naissant, Né, Nais, Naquis.)

1. Je nais, nais, naît ; naissons, naissez, naissent.
2. Je naissais, naissais, naissait ; naissions, naissiez, naissaient.

3. Je naquis, naquis, naquit; naquîmes, naquîtes, naquirent.
4. Je naîtrai, naîtras, naîtra ; naîtrons, naîtrez, naîtront.
1. Je naîtrais, naîtrais, naîtrait ; naîtrions, naîtriez, naîtraient.
1. Nais, qu' il naisse ; naissons, naissez, qu' ils naissent.
1. Que je naisse, naisses, naisse; naissions, naissiez, naissent.
2. Que je naquisse, naquisses, naquît ; naquissions, naquissiez, naquissent.

Naître requires the auxiliary *être.*

461. RENAÎTRE, *to be born again*, has no *past participle*, and therefore no *compound tenses.*

462. *PAÎTRE, to Graze.*

Participle Present.—Paissant. | *Participle Past.*—Pu, *m.* (no fem.)
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Paître, Paissant, Pu, Pais, ——.)

1. Je pais, pais, paît ; paissons, paissez, paissent.
2. Je paissais, paissais, paissait ; paissions, paissiez, paissaient.
3. No Perfect.
4. Je paîtrai, paîtras, paîtra : paîtrons, paîtrez, paîtront.
1. Je paîtrais, paîtrais, paîtrait ; paîtrions, paîtriez, paîtraient.
1. Pais, qu' il paisse ; paissons, paissez, qu' ils paissent.
1. Que je paisse, paisses, paisse; paissions, paissiez, paissent.
2. No Imperfect Subjunctive.

463. REPAÎTRE, *to feed*, has a *Perfect—je repus*—and an *Imperfect Subjunctive—que je repusse.*

464. *PEINDRE, to Paint.*

Participle Present.—Peignant.
Participle Past.—Peint, *m.* ; peinte, *f.*
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Peindre, Peignant, Peint, Peins, Peignis.)

1. Je peins, peins, peint ; peignons, peignez, peignent.
2. Je peignais, peignais, peignait ; peignions, peigniez, peignaient.
3. Je peignis, peignis, peignit ; peignîmes, peignîtes, peignirent.
4. Je peindrai, peindras, peindra ; peindrons, peindrez, peindront.

1. Je peindrais, peindrais, peindrait; peindrions, peindriez, peindraient.
1. Peins, qu' il peigne; peignons, peignez, qu' ils peignent.
1. Que je peigne, peignes, peigne; peignions, peigniez, peignent.
2. Que je peignisse, peignisses, peignît; peignissions, peignissiez, peignissent.

In the same manner are conjugated all verbs ending in *eindre;* as,

Éteindre,	*to extinguish.*	Teindre,	*to dye.*
Feindre,	*to feign.*	&c.	&c.

465. *PLAIRE, to Please.*

Participle Present.—Plaisant. | *Participle Past.*—Plu.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Plaire, Plaisant, Plu, Plais, Plus.)

1. Je plais, plais, plaît; plaisons, plaisez, plaisent.
2. Je plaisais, plaisais, plaisait; plaisions, plaisiez, plaisaient.
3. Je plus, plus, plut; plûmes, plûtes, plurent.
4. Je plairai, plairas, plaira; plairons, plairez, plairont.
1. Je plairais, plairais, plairait; plairions, plairiez, plairaient.
1. Plais, qu' il plaise; plaisons, plaisez, qu' ils plaisent.
1. Que je plaise, plaises, plaise; plaisions, plaisiez, plaisent.
2. Que je plusse, plusses, plût; plussions, plussiez, plussent.

Conjugate in the same manner:—

Déplaire,	*to displease.*	Complaire,	*to humour.*

466. *PRENDRE, to Take.*

Participle Present.—Prenant. | *Participle Past.*—Pris.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Prendre, Prenant, Pris, Prends, Pris.)

1. Je prends, prends, prend; prenons, prenez, prennent.
2. Je prenais, prenais, prenait; prenions, preniez, prenaient.
3. Je pris, pris, prit; prîmes, prîtes, prirent.
4. Je prendrai, prendras, prendra; prendrons, prendrez, prendront.
1. Je prendrais, prendrais, prendrait; prendrions, prendriez, prendraient.

1. Prends, qu'il prenne ; prenons, prenez, qu'ils prennent.
1. Que je prenne, prennes, prenne ; prenions, preniez, prennent.
2. Que je prisse, prisses, prît ; prissions; prissiez, prissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Apprendre, *to learn.*	Se méprendre, *to mistake.*
Comprendre, *to understand.*	Reprendre, *to take back, to reply, to censure.*
Désapprendre, *to forget.*	Surprendre, *to surprise.*
Entreprendre, *to undertake.*	

REMARK.—The *n* in prendre and its derivative verbs is doubled before *e* mute.

467. *RÉSOUDRE, to Resolve.*

Participle Present.—Résolvant.

Participle Past.—Résolu *or* résous.

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Résoudre, Résolvant, Résolu *or* Résous, Résous, Résolus.)

1. Je résous, résous, résout ; résolvons, résolvez, résolvent.
2. Je résolvais, résolvais, résolvait ; résolvions, résolviez, résolvaient.
3. Je résolus, résolus, résolut ; résolûmes, résolûtes, résolurent.
4. Je résoudrai, résoudras, résoudra ; résoudrons, résoudrez, résoudront.
1. Je résoudrais, résoudrais, résoudrait ; résoudrions, résoudriez, résoudraient.
1. Résous, qu'il résolve ; résolvons, résolvez, qu'ils résolvent.
1. Que je résolve, résolves, résolve ; résolvions, résolviez, résolvent.
2. Que je résolusse, résolusses, résolût ; résolussions, résolussiez, résolussent.

The past participle *résous* is employed only when it means *reduced*, or *changed into;* whereas, *résolu* means *resolved, determined.*

468. *RIRE, to Laugh.*

Participle Present.—Riant.

Participle Past.—Ri, *m.* (no feminine).

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Rire, Riant, Ri, Ris, Ris.)

1. *Je ris,* ris, rit ; rions, riez, rient.
2. *Je riais,* riais, riait ; riions, riiez, riaient.

3. Je ris, ris, rit ; rîmes, rîtes, rirent.
4. Je rirai, riras, rira ; rirons, rirez, riront.
1. Je rirais, rirais, rirait ; ririons, ririez, riraient.
1. Ris, qu' il rie ; rions, riez, qu' ils rient.
1. Que je rie, ries, rie ; riions, riiez, rient.
2. Que je risse, risses, rît ; rissions, rissiez, rissent.

Se rire de quelqu' un means, to laugh at some one.

Conjugate like *rire*, Sourire *to smile.*

469. *SUIVRE, to Follow.*

Participle Present.—Suivant. | *Participle Past.*—Suivi.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Suivre, Suivant, Suivi, Suis, Suivis.)

1. Je suis, suis, suit ; suivons, suivez, suivent.
2. Je suivais, suivais, suivait ; suivions, suiviez, suivaient.
3. Je suivis, suivis, suivit ; suivîmes, suivîtes, suivirent.
4. Je suivrai, suivras, suivra ; suivrons, suivrez, suivront.
1. Je suivrais, suivrais, suivrait ; suivrions, suivriez, suivraient.
1. Suis, qu' il suive ; suivons, suivez, qu' ils suivent.
1. Que je suive, suives, suive ; suivions, suiviez, suivent.
2. Que je suivisse, suivisses, suivît ; suivissions, suivissiez, suivissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—*Poursuivre*, to pursue, to prosecute, and *s' ensuivre*, to result ; the latter, however, is only used in the third persons singular and plural.

470. *TAIRE, to keep Secret, to Conceal.*

Participle Present.—Taisant. | *Participle Past.*—Tû, *m.* ; tue, *f.*
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Taire, Taisant, Tû, Tais, Tus.)

1. Je tais, tais, tait ; taisons, taisez, taisent.
2. Je taisais, taisais, taisait ; taisions, taisiez, taisaient.
3. Je tus, tus, tut ; tûmes, tûtes, turent.
4. Je tairai, tairas, taira ; tairons, tairez, tairont.
1. Je tairais, tairais, tairait ; tairions, tairiez, tairaient.
1. Tais, qu' il taise ; taisons, taisez, qu' ils taisent.
1. Que je taise, taises, taise ; taisions, taisiez, taisent.
2. Que je tusse, tusses, tût ; tussions, tussiez, tussent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Se taire, to be silent, to hold one's tongue.

471. *TRAIRE, to Milk.*

Participle Present.—Trayant.
Participle Past.—Trait, *m.*; traite, *f.*
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Traire, Trayant, Trait, Trais, ——.)

1. Je trais, trais, trait; trayons, trayez, traient.
2. Je trayais, trayais, trayait; trayions, trayiez, trayaient.
3. No Perfect.
4. Je trairai, trairas, traira; trairons, trairez, trairont.
1. Je trairais, trairais, trairait; trairions, trairiez, trairaient.
1. Trais, qu' il traie; trayons, trayez, qu' ils traient.
1. Que je traie, traies, traie; trayions, trayiez, traient.
2. No Imperfect Subjunctive.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Abstraire,	*to abstract.*	Rentraire,	*to darn.*
Distraire,	*to distract.*	Retraire,	*to redeem.*
Extraire,	*to extract.*	Soustraire,	*to subtract.*

Abstraire is very seldom used.

ATTRAIRE, *to attract, to allure*, is used only in the *Infinitive.*

472. *VAINCRE, to Conquer.*

Participle Present.—Vainquant. | *Participle Past.*—Vaincu.
(*Primitive Tenses.*—Vaincre, Vainquant, Vaincu, Vaincs, Vainquis.)

1. Je vaincs, vaincs, vainc; vainquons, vainquez, vainquent.
2. Je vainquais, vainquais, vainquait; vainquions, vainquiez, vainquaient.
3. Je vainquis, vainquis, vainquit; vainquîmes, vainquîtes, vainquirent.
4. Je vaincrai, vaincras, vaincra; vaincrons, vaincrez, vaincront.
1. Je vaincrais, vaincrais, vaincrait; vaincrions, vaincriez, vaincraient.
1. No 2nd person Sing., qu' il vainque; vainquons, vainquez, qu' ils vainquent.
1. Que je vainque, vainques, vainque; vainquions, vainquiez, vainquent.
2. Que je vainquisse, vainquisses, vainquît; vainquissions, vainquissiez, vainquissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—Convaincre, *to convince, to convict.*

473. *VIVRE, to Live.*

Participle Present.—Vivant. | *Participle Past.*—Vécu. (no fem.)

(*Primitive Tenses.*—Vivre, Vivant, Vécu, Vis, Vécus.)

1. Je vis, vis, vit ; vivons, vivez, vivent.
2. Je vivais, vivais, vivait ; vivions, viviez, vivaient.
3. Je vécus, vécus, vécut ; vécûmes, vécûtes, vécurent.
4. Je vivrai, vivras, vivra ; vivrons, vivrez, vivront.
1. Je vivrais, vivrais, vivrait ; vivrions, vivriez, vivraient.
1. Vis, qu' il vive ; vivons, vivez, qu' ils vivent.
1. Que je vive, vives, vive ; vivions, viviez, vivent.
2. Que je vécusse, vécusses, vécût ; vécussions, vécussiez, vécussent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—

Revivre, *to revive.* | Survivre, *to survive.*

Verbs whose tenses cannot be formed regularly from the Primitive.

474. *BOIRE, to Drink.*

Participle Present.—Buvant. | *Participle Past.*—Bu.

1. Je bois, bois, boit ; buvons, buvez, boivent.
2. Je buvais, buvais, buvait ; buvions, buviez, buvaient.
3. Je bus, bus, but ; bûmes, bûtes, burent.
4. Je boirai, boiras, boira ; boirons, boirez, boiront.
1. Je boirais, boirais, boirait ; boirions, boiriez, boiraient.
1. Bois, qu' il boive ; buvons, buvez, qu' ils boivent.
1. Que je boive, boives, boive ; buvions, buviez, boivent.
2. Que je busse, busses, bût ; bussions, bussiez, bussent.

475. *DIRE, to Say.*

Participle Present.—Disant. | *Participle Past.*—Dit, *m.* ; dite, *f.*

1. Je dis, dis, dit ; disons, DITES, disent.
2. Je disais, disais, disait ; disions, disiez, disaient.
3. Je dis, dis, dit ; dîmes, dîtes, dirent.
4. Je dirai, diras, dira ; dirons, direz, diront.
1. Je dirais, dirais, dirait ; dirions, diriez, diraient.
1. Dis, qu' il dise ; disons, DITES, qu' ils disent.
1. Que je dise, dises, dise ; disions, disiez, disent.
2. Que je disse, disses, dît ; dissions, dissiez, dissent.

Conjugate in the same manner :—Redire, *to say again.*

476. MAUDIRE, *to curse*, is conjugated like dire, but has double *s* in the *participle present*, and, therefore, also

in the derivative tenses; as, nous maudissons, vous maudissez, ils maudissent; je maudissais; que je maudisse.

FRIRE, *to fry*, is conjugated like *dire*, but it is only used in the Present Infinitive; in the singular of the Present Indicative; in the Future; in the Conditional; in the second person singular of the Imperative, and in the compound tenses.

477. *FAIRE, to Do, to Make.*

Participle Present.—Faisant. | *Participle Past.*—Fait.

1. Je fais, fais, fait; faisons, FAITES, FONT.
2. Je faisais, faisais, faisait; faisions, faisiez, faisaient.
3. Je fis, fis, fit; fîmes, fîtes, firent.
4. Je ferai, feras, fera; ferons, ferez, feront.
1. Je ferais, ferais, ferait; ferions, feriez, feraient.
1. Fais, qu' il *fasse*; faisons, FAITES, qu' ils *fassent*.
1. Que je *fasse*, *fasses*, *fasse*; *fassions*, *fassiez*, *fassent*.
2. Que je fisse, fisses, fît; fissions, fissiez, fissent.

Conjugate in the same manner:—

Contrefaire,	*to counterfeit, to mimic.*	Refaire,	*to do again.*
Défaire,	*to undo, to defeat.*	Satisfaire,	*to satisfy.*
		Surfaire,	*to overcharge, to exact.*

478. *BRAIRE, to Bray.*

IND. *Present.* Il brait; ils braient.
Future. Il braira; ils brairont.
CONDITIONAL. Il brairait; ils brairaient.

479. *BRUIRE, to Rustle.*

IND. *Present.*—Il bruit. | *Imperfect.*—Il bruyait; ils bruyaient.

480. *CLORE, to Close.*

Participle Past.—Clos.

IND. *Present.* Je clos, tu clos, il clôt.
Future. Je clorai, cloras, clora; clorons, clorez, cloront.
CONDITIONAL. Je clorais, clorais, clorait; clorions, cloriez, cloraient.

Conjugate in the same manner:—Enclore, *to enclose*.

ÉCLORE, *to be hatched*, or *to blow like a flower*, has in the Past Participle *éclos*; Indicative Present, *il éclôt, ils éclosent*; Future, *il éclôra, ils éclôront*; Conditional, *il éclôrait, ils éclôraient*; Subjunctive Present, *qu' il éclose, qu' ils éclosent*. The compound tenses are conjugated with être.

SYNTAX OF VERBS.

I. PLACE OF VERBS.

481. The verb is generally placed in French as in English, after the subject or nominative; as,

Cet *auteur parle* de physique comme un homme *qui* n'y *entend* rien.	*This* author speaks *of physics like a man* who understands *nothing about it.*

482. EXCEPTION I.—When the subject is a pronoun, the verb is placed before it in interrogative sentences, if they do not commence with *est-ce que*, or *qu' est-ce que* (see Rule 180); as,

Voyez-vous?	*Do you see?*
Quand *finira*-t-il?	*When will he finish?*

REMARK.—If in an interrogative sentence the subject is a noun, it is placed before the verb (see Rule 353).

483. EXCEPTION II.—An impersonal verb is generally placed before the subject; as,

Il est arrivé une nouvelle fâcheuse.	*Bad news has arrived.*

484. EXCEPTION III.—The verb is placed before the subject when the sentence begins with *ainsi*, thus, so; or *tel*, such; as,

Ainsi l'a voulu sa destinée.	Thus *has his destiny willed it.*
Tel fut le résultat.	Such *was the result.*

485. EXCEPTION IV.—The verb is placed before the subject, when the words of another person are quoted; that is, when—"said he," "added he," "answered he," "cried he," &c., are used; as,

Est-ce là ce qu' il faut que je prenne? *dit-il.*	*Is that what I must take?* said he.
Non, *répondit le roi.*	*No,* answered the king.

486. EXCEPTION V.—The verb is placed before the subject when the subjunctive mood is used in a sentence expressing a determination or wish; as,

Dussé-je y périr.	Should I perish there.

(See Rules 180, 181, 182.)

II. AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH ITS SUBJECT.

487. A verb always agrees with its subject in number and person; as,

Nous *venons*; ils *viennent*.	*We* come; *they* come.
Le garçon *lit*; la fille *chante*.	*The boy* reads; *the girl* sings.

488. If the verb has two or more subjects united by *et*, it is put in the plural; as,

Son père et sa mère *partiront* demain.	*His father and mother* will set out *to-morrow*.

489. When the verb has more than one subject, and these subjects are of different persons—the *first* person plural must be used if one of the subjects is in the first person, and if not, the *second* person must be used in preference to the third, if one of the subjects is in the the second person; as,

Mon avocat et moi *sommes* de cet avis. (Acad.)	*My lawyer and I* are *of this opinion*.
Son père, sa mère et moi, le lui *avons* défendu. (Acad.)	*His father, mother, and I* have *forbidden him to do it*.
Vous et lui, vous *irez* à la ville.	*You and he* shall go *to the town*.

490. *Ni* . . . *ni* requires the verb to be in the plural. But when one of the subjects united by *ni* can alone perform the act, the verb is put in the singular. This also applies to *ni l' un ni l' autre*; as,

Ni le temps ni le malheur ne *doivent* effacer de notre cœur le souvenir d'un ami.	*Neither time nor misfortune ought to efface from our heart the memory of a friend*.
Ni l'un ni l'autre n'*ont* fait leur devoir.	*Neither has done his duty*.
Ni l'un ni l'autre n'*est* son maître.	*Neither is his master*.

491. When two subjects in the singular are connected by *ou*, or, the verb is put in the singular, but when the subjects are of different persons, the verb is generally put in the plural, and then it should agree with the *first* person rather than with the second, and with the *second* (if there is no first) rather than with the third; as,

Lui *ou* elle *viendra* avec moi.	*He* or *she* will come *with me.*
Vous *ou* moi nous le *ferons.*	*You* or *I* will do *it.*
Vous *ou* lui *parlerez.*	*You* or *he* will speak.

492. When the subjects connected by *ou* are both in the singular and of the same person, and *et* or *soit-soit* might be substituted for *ou*, the verb is put in the plural ; as,

La peur *ou* la misère *ont* fait commettre bien des fautes. (Acad.)	*Fear* or (and) *misery* has (have) *caused the commission of many faults.*

III. GOVERNMENT OF VERBS.

493. The object of a verb is generally placed *after* the verb when it is a *noun*, and *before* the verb when it is a *personal pronoun* ; as,

Je vois *le livre.*	*I see the book.*
Je *vous* vois.	*I see you.*

494. When a verb has two objects, the one *direct*, and the other *indirect*, the direct object is put first ; but should the indirect object be shorter than the direct object, the indirect one is placed first ; as,

J' ai écrit UNE LETTRE *à mon frère.*	*I have written a letter to my brother.*
J' ai écrit *à mon frère* UNE TRÈS-LONGUE LETTRE.	*I have written a very long letter to my brother.*

495. Passive verbs require *de* or *par* before the noun or pronoun which follows them—*de*, when the verb expresses an action in which the *mind* only is concerned ; *par*, when the verb expresses an action in which the body participates ; as,

Il est aimé *de* ses parents.	*He is loved* by *his parents.*
Rome fut brûlée *par* les Gaules.	*Rome was burned* by *the Gauls.*
Cette chanson a été composée *par* M. L.	*This song has been composed* by *Mr. L.*

496. Most reflective verbs require *de* before the noun or pronoun which they govern; as,

Se ressouvenir D' une demande.	*To remember a demand.*
Se fâcher, se piquer *de* quelque chose, &c.	*To be angry* at, *proud* of *something*, &c.

VERBS WHICH REQUIRE À.

497.

(Verbs which take to *or* at *after them in English are not given in the list.)*

S' amuser *à*,	*to amuse one's self* with.	Nuire *à*,	*to hurt.*
Attenter *à*,	*to attempt.*	Obéir *à*,	*to obey.*
Cacher *à*,	*to conceal* from.	S' opposer *à*,	*to oppose.*
Commander *à*,	*to command.*	Ordonner *à*,	*to order.*
Comparer *à*,	*to compare* with.	Ôter *à*,	*to take* from.
Compatir *à*,	*to pity.*	Pardonner *à*,	*to pardon.*
Convenir *à*,	*to suit.*	Penser *à*,	*to think* of.
Demander *à*,	*to ask for.*	Permettre *à*,	*to permit.*
Déplaire *à*,	*to displease.*	Persuader *à*,	*to persuade.*
Désobéir *à*,	*to disobey.*	Plaire *à*,	*to please.*
Destiner *à*,	*to destine* for.	Pourvoir *à*,	*to provide* for.
Échapper *à*,	*to escape* from.	Prendre *à*,	*to take* from.
Se fier *à*,	*to trust.*	Renoncer *à*,	*to renounce.*
Fournir *à*,	*to provide* with.	Résister *à*,	*to resist.*
(Jouer *à*,	*to play* at.)	Ressembler *à*,	*to resemble.*
Manquer *à*,	*to break.*	Succéder *à*,	*to succeed.*
		Toucher *à*,	*to touch.*

VERBS WHICH REQUIRE *DE*.

498.

(Verbs which take of *or* from *after them in English are not given in the list.)*

Abuser *de*,	*to abuse.*	Consoler *de*,	*to console* for.
Accabler *de*,	*to overwhelm* with.	Convenir *de*,	*to agree* about.
		Dépendre *de*,	*to depend* upon.
Amuser *de*,	*to amuse* with.	Disconvenir *de*,	*to deny.*
Avoir besoin *de*,	*to want.*	Discourir *de*,	*to discourse* about.
Avoir pitié *de*,	*to pity.*		
Baigner *de*,	*to bathe* with.	Dispenser *de*,	*to dispense* with.
Bénir *de*,	*to bless* for.	Douer *de*,	*to endow* with.
Blâmer *de*,	*to blame* for.	Douter *de*,	*to doubt.*
Changer *de*,	*to change.*	Embellir *de*,	*to embellish* with.
Charger *de*,	*to load* with.		
Commander *de*,	*to command.*	Emplir *de*,	*to fill* with.

Faire *de*,	*to do* with.	Penser *de*,	*to think* of [*things*].
Garnir *de*,	*to trim* with.	Plaindre *de*,	*to pity* for.
Jouer *de*,	*to play* on.	Prendre garde *de*,	*to avoid*.
Jouir *de*,	*to enjoy*.	Profiter *de*,	*to profit* by.
Louer *de*,	*to praise* for.	Punir *de*,	*to punish* for.
Manquer *de*,	*to want*.	Remercier *de*,	*to thank* for.
Médire *de*,	*to slander*.	Répondre *de*,	*to answer* for.
Menacer *de*,	*to threaten* with.	Rire *de*,	*to laugh* at.
Munir *de*,	*to supply* with.	Rougir *de*,	*to blush* with.
Nourrir *de*,	*to nourish* with.	Triompher *de*,	*to triumph* over.
Orner *de*,	*to adorn* with.	Vivre *de*,	*to live* upon.
Parler *de*,	*to speak* about.		

VERBS WHICH, ALTHOUGH THEY REQUIRE A PREPOSITION IN ENGLISH, YET TAKE NONE IN FRENCH.

499.

Approuver,	*to approve* of.	Regarder,	*to look* at.
Attendre,	*to wait* for.	Remettre,	*to put* off.
Chercher,	*to look* for.	Résoudre,	*to resolve* upon.
Demander,	*to ask* for.	Souhaiter,	*to wish* for.
Écouter,	*to listen* to.	Vendre,	*to sell* for.
Emporter,	*to take* away.		

VERBS FOLLOWED BY AN INFINITIVE.

500. When a verb is followed by another verb in the Infinitive, *à*, *de*, or *pour* is placed before the latter, according as the foregoing verb takes the one or the other of these prepositions.

There are, however, some verbs which do not require any preposition before the Infinitive which follows them.

EXAMPLES.

Il l' *aide* À *marcher*.	*He* assists *him* in walking.
Je *regrette* D' *avoir* perdu mon temps.	*I* regret to have *lost my time*.
Je *viens* POUR vous *dire* que . . .	*I* come to tell *you that* . . .
Aller travailler.	*To go and work*.
Elle *va chanter*.	*She* is going to sing.
Je ne *peux* pas *dormir*.	*I cannot* sleep.

501. REMARK.—The verb which follows a preposition is put in the present infinitive. *En* is the only preposition which is followed by the present participle.

EXAMPLES.

Je vous remercie *de* me l' *avoir* rapporté.	*I thank you* for having *brought it back to me.*
Sans rire.	*Without laughing.*
On apprend *en vieillissant.*	*People learn* in growing old.

VERBS WHICH TAKE *A* AFTER THEM BEFORE ANOTHER VERB IN THE INFINITIVE.

502.

(Verbs which take to *after them in English are not given in the list.)*

Aboutir *à*,	*to end* in.	Parvenir *à*,	*to succeed* in.
S' accorder *à*,	*to agree* in.	Passer *à*,	*to spend* in.
Aider *à*,	*to assist* in.	Penser *à*,	*to think* of.
S' amuser *à*,	*to amuse one's self* with.	Perdre *à*,	*to lose* in.
		Persévérer *à*,	*to persevere* in.
Se déterminer *à*,	*to resolve* upon.	Persister *à*,	*to persist* in.
Exceller *à*,	*to excel* in.	Se plaire *à*,	*to delight* in.
Exercer *à*,	*to exercise* in.	Prendre plaisir *à*,	*to delight* in.
Se fatiguer *à*,	*to get tired* with.	Renoncer *à*,	*to renounce.*
Gagner *à*,	*to gain* by.	Réussir *à*,	*to succeed* in.
Se mettre *à*,	*to set about.*	Songer *à*,	*to think* of.
S' obstiner *à*,	*to persist* in.	Tâcher *à*,	*to aim* at.
Oublier *à*,	*to forget* how.	Viser *à*,	

VERBS WHICH REQUIRE *DE* BEFORE ANOTHER VERB IN THE INFINITIVE.

503.

(Verbs which take of *or* from *after them in English are not given in the list.)*

Achever *de*,	*to finish* to.	Convenir *de*,	*to agree* to.
Affecter *de*,	*to affect* to.	Craindre *de*,	*to fear* to.
S' affliger *de*,	*to be grieved* at.	Défendre *de*,	*to forbid* to.
Ambitionner *de*,	*to be ambitious* to.	Défier *de*,	*to defy* to.
		Demander *de* or *à*, †	*to ask* to.
Appréhender *de*,	*to fear* to.	Se dépêcher *de*,	*to make haste* to.
Avertir *de*,	*to warn* to.	Désespérer *de*,	*to despair* to.
Blâmer *de*,	*to blame* for.	Différer *de*,	*to defer* to, *to delay* to.
Brûler *de*,	*to be impatient* to.	Dire *de*,	*to tell* to.
Cesser *de*,	*to cease* to.	Discontinuer *de*,	*to discontinue* to.
Charger *de*,	*to charge* to.	Disconvenir *de*,	*to deny.*
Commander *de*,	*to command* to.	Dispenser *de*,	*to dispense* with.
Conjurer *de*,	*to conjure* to.	Écrire *de*,	*to write* to.
Conseiller *de*,	*to advise.*	S' efforcer *de*,	*to endeavour* to.
Continuer *de* or *à*, †	*to continue* to.	Empêcher *de*,	*to prevent.*
Contraindre *de* or *à*, †	*to compel* to.		

S' empresser *de* or *à*, †	*to hasten* to.
Entreprendre *de*,	*to undertake* to.
Essayer *de*,	*to try* to.
S' étonner *de*,	*to be astonished* at.
Éviter *de*,	*to avoid* to.
Excuser *de*,	*to excuse* for.
Feindre *de*,	*to feign* to.
Féliciter *de*,	*to congratulate* upon.
Finir *de*,	*to finish*.
Se flatter *de*,	*to flatter one's self* to.
Forcer *de* or *à*, †	*to force* to.
Se garder *de*,	*to take care not* to.
Se glorifier *de*,	*to glory* in.
Gronder *de*,	*to scold* for.
Se hâter *de*,	*to hasten* to.
Manquer *de*,	*to fail* to.
Menacer *de*,	*to threaten* to.
Mériter *de*,	*to deserve* to.
Négliger *de*,	*to neglect* to.
Obliger *de* or *à*, †	*to oblige* to.
Offrir *de*,	*to offer* to.
Omettre *de*,	*to omit* to.
Ordonner *de*,	*to order* to.
Oublier *de*,	*to forget* to.
Pardonner *de*,	*to forgive* for.
Permettre *de*,	*to permit* to.
Persuader *de*,	*to persuade* to.
Se piquer *de*,	*to pretend* to.
Plaindre *de*,	*to pity* to *or* for.
Prescrire *de*,	*to prescribe* to.
Presser *de*,	*to press* to, *to urge* to.
Prier *de*,	*to request* to.
Promettre *de*,	*to promise* to.
Proposer *de*,	*to propose* to.
Recommander *de*,	*to recommend* to.
Refuser *de*,	*to refuse* to.
Regretter *de*,	*to regret* to.
Se réjouir *de*,	*to rejoice* to.
Remercier *de*,	*to thank* for.
Se repentir *de*,	*to repent* to.
Reprocher *de*,	*to reproach* for.
Résoudre *de*,	*to resolve* to.
Rire *de*,	*to laugh* at.
Risquer *de*,	*to run the risk* of.
Rougir *de*,	*to blush* to.
Soupçonner *de*,	*to suspect* to.
Se souvenir *de*,	*to remember* to.
Suggérer *de*,	*to suggest* to.
Supplier *de*,	*to entreat* to.
Tâcher *de*,	*to endeavour* to.

† *De* or *à* as it sounds best.—(Always *de* in the passive.)

VERBS WHICH REQUIRE NO PREPOSITION AFTER THEM BEFORE A VERB IN THE INFINITIVE.

304.

Aimer mieux, †	*to prefer*.
Aller,	*to go*.
Apercevoir,	*to perceive*.
Compter,	*to intend*.
Croire,	*to think*.
Daigner,	*to deign*.
Devoir,	*to owe*.
Entendre,	*to hear*.
Envoyer,	*to send*.
Espérer,	*to hope*.
Faire,	*to make, to cause*.
Falloir,	*to be necessary*.
S' imaginer,	*to fancy*.
Laisser,	*to allow*.
Oser,	*to dare*.
Paraître,	*to appear*.
Pouvoir,	*to be able*.
Prétendre,	*to pretend*.
Savoir,	*to know*.
Sembler,	*to seem*.
Souhaiter,	*to wish*.
Valoir mieux, †	*to be better*.
Venir, ‡	*to come*.
Voir,	*to see*.
Vouloir,	*to wish*, *to be willing*.

† *Aimer mieux* and *valoir mieux*, if followed by two verbs in the Infinitive, require *de* before the second.

‡ Only when *venir* means literally to come.

VERBS WHICH REQUIRE *POUR* AFTER THEM BEFORE A VERB IN THE INFINITIVE.

505. *Pour* is used before another verb in the infinitive, when *in order to*, or *for* can be employed in English; as,

Je me tais *pour* ne pas vous fatiguer.	*I am silent* (*in order not to fatigue you.*
Il a été chassé *pour* avoir trop parlé.	*He has been expelled* for *having talked too much.*

IV. THE USE OF THE DIFFERENT MOODS, TENSES, AND PARTICIPLES.

§ I. THE INFINITIVE.

The *Infinitive* is employed as in English.

506. The *Infinitive Present* is often used as a substantive; as,

Le manger; le boire.	*The eating; the drinking.*

507. The *Infinitive Present* is often used after interrogations: as,

Que faire?	*What can be done?*
Que dire?	*What can we say?*
Comment éviter ce danger?	*How can this danger be avoided?*

§ II. OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

508. The *Present Participle*, used as such, remains unchanged; as,

Les courtisans *flattant* les passions du prince et ne lui *donnant* que des conseils intéressés sont la ruine de leur pays.	*Courtiers, flattering the passions of the prince, and giving him only selfish counsels, are the ruin of their country.*
On représente Flore comme une belle nymphe, *tenant* en main et en *portant* sur la tête une guirlande de fleurs.	*Flora is represented as a beautiful nymph, holding in her hand, or bearing on her head, a garland of flowers.*

509. When the Present Participle simply expresses a quality, it is regarded as an adjective, and changes its termination according to the gender and number of its noun or pronoun: as,

Il a les manières *obligeantes*.	*He has* obliging *manners*.
Des hommes *prévoyants*.	Cautious *men*.
Une maison à lui *appartenante*. (Acad.)	*A house* belonging *to him*.
Ces deux choses sont *dépendantes* l'une de l'autre. (Acad.)	*These two things are* dependent *on each other*.

§ III. OF THE PAST PARTICIPLE.

510. The *Past Participle*, when it is employed as an *adjective*, that is, when it is used without an auxiliary, agrees in gender and number with the noun or pronoun to which it relates; as,

Les jours *donnés* à Dieu ne sont jamais perdus.	*The days* consecrated *to God are never lost*.
Des lettres bien *écrites*.	*Letters well* written.

511. The *Past Participle*, used with *être*, agrees with the subject in gender and number; as,

Mon père est *venu*.	*My father is come*.
Ma mère est *venue*.	*My mother is come*.
Mes frères sont *partis*.	*My brothers are departed*.
Mes sœurs sont *parties*.	*My sisters are departed*.
Nous sommes *charmés* de vous voir.	*We are delighted to see you*.
Ces gens sont *invités*.	*These people are invited*.

EXCEPTION.—*The Past Participle of Reflective Verbs does not agree with the subject.* (*See Rule* 513).

512. The *Past Participle* of an active verb, accompanied by the verb *avoir*, agrees with the direct object when the direct object precedes (and only when it *precedes*) the past participle; as,

Avez-vous lu sa lettre?	*Have you read his letter?*
Oui, je L' ai lue.	*Yes, I have read it.*
Avez-vous ouvert les fenêtres? Oui, je LES ai *ouvertes*.	*Have you opened the windows? Yes, I have opened them.*
Ils ont pris plusieurs villes. Ils LES ont *prises*.	*They have taken several towns. They have taken them.*
Vous avez eu la bonté. Les bontés QUE vous avez *eues*.	*You have had the kindness. The kindnesses which you have had.*

513. REMARK I.—The Past Participle of Reflective or Pronominal Verbs (which form their compound tenses with *être* instead of with *avoir*), agrees with the *direct object* (and only with the *direct* object), when the direct object precedes the past participle; as,

Elles s' en sont *allées*.	*They have gone away.*
Ils SE sont *promenés*.	*They have taken a walk.*
Les lettres QU' ils se sont *écrites*.	*The letters* WHICH *they have* written *to one another.*
Whereas,	
Elles se sont parlé.	*They have spoken to one another.*
Elle s' est proposé de faire un voyage.	*She purposes to make a journey.*
Ils se sont écrit des lettres.	*They have written letters* TO *one another.*

514. REMARK II.—The past participle of *impersonal* verbs remains unchanged; as,

La chaleur qu' il a fait.	*The heat which has been.*
L' inondation qu' il y a eu.	*The inundation which has taken place.*
Les sommes qu' il lui a fallu.	*The sums which he has needed.*

515. REMARK III.—The Past Participle followed by an *Infinitive* (expressed or understood), remains invariable, when the object is that of the *infinitive*; as,

EXAMPLES.

Where the object is that of the Infinitive.	*Where the object is that of the Past Participle.*
Les dames *que* j' ai vu *peindre* par M. N.	Les dames *que* j' ai *vues* peindre (peignant).
The ladies whom *I saw* being painted *by Mr. N.*	*The ladies* whom *I have seen* painting.
Je *les* ai vu *applaudir* par la foule.	Je *les (f. pl.)* ai *vues* applaudir l' improvisateur.
I have seen them applauded *by the crowd.*	*I have* seen them *applaud the improvisator.*
Elle *s'* est laissé *surprendre* par ces promesses.	Elle *s'* est *laissée* tomber.
She suffered herself to be taken in *by those promises.*	*She fell.*
Nous avons fait toutes les démarches *que* nous avons pu (*or* dû) [*faire* understood].	
We have done all the steps which *we have been able* (or *ought*) [to do.].	

516. REMARK IV.—When the Past Participle stands between two *que*'s, the first *que* is the object of the verb which follows the past participle, and, therefore, the latter must be invariable; as,

Les maux *que* j' ai prédit que *vous auriez à supporter.*	*The evils* which *I have predicted that* you would have to bear.

517. REMARK V.—The Past Participle of *Neuter* Verbs conjugated with *avoir*, can never change, because a neuter verb can have no direct object which might precede the past participle; as,

Les années que j' ai vécu là.	*The years which (during which) I have lived there.*
Les dix ans qu' il a régné.	*The ten years which (during which) he has reigned.*

§ IV. OF THE INDICATIVE MOOD.

THE PRESENT.

518. The *Present of the Indicative* is used in French in the same cases as in English; as,

Je vous *vois.*	*I* see *you.*
Il *est* content.	*He* is *satisfied.*
Elle *vient* tous les jours.	*She* comes *every day.*

519. The *Present of the Indicative* is sometimes used instead of the future, when there are other words in the sentence which denote futurity; as,

Je *suis* de retour dans un moment.	*I shall be back in a moment.*
Il *part* demain.	*He will set out to-morrow.*

520. The *Present of the Indicative* is often used instead of the perfect, in order to represent more emphatically things which happened in time past; as,

Menzikoff criait un jour ses petits pâtés dans les rues de Moscou. Pierre, frappé de sa bonne mine, l' *appelle*, lui *fait* quelques questions, et *dit*—Je te retiens à mon service.	*Menzikoff one day was hawking out his small pies in the streets of Moscow. Peter, struck with his noble looks,* called *him*, addressed *some questions to him, and* said—*I keep you in my service.*

321. THE IMPERFECT AND THE PERFECT.

The *Imperfect of the Indicative* (*Imperfect* denoting something at the time unfinished—*imperfect*), is used,

1st. To express something which has been done at the moment when something else took place, when *I was doing*, &c., can be used in English.

2nd. To express something which was habitual, where *used to* can be employed in English.

3rd. To describe qualities, customs, manners, and state in which persons or places were or used to be in time past.

The *Perfect of the Indicative* is used to express something which has been done at a time completely past, and which was fully accomplished then; but it cannot be used when something is spoken of as done *this day*, *this week*, *this month*, *this year*, *this century*. (see Rule 322.)

EXAMPLES.

Un jour que Charles XII *dictait* à Stralsund des lettres pour la Suède, à un secrétaire, une bombe *tomba* sur la maison, *perça* le toit, et *vint éclater* près de la chambre même du roi.

One day when Charles XII. dictated (was dictating) *letters for Sweden to a secretary, a bomb* fell *upon the house*, pierced *the roof*, *and* burst *near the very chamber of the king.*

Le clair de la lune *favorisait* la poursuite.

The moonlight favoured *the pursuit.*

Pierre I *se levait* régulièrement à quatre heures du matin; à cinq on lui *apportait* un petit déjeûner; il *dînait* à onze; il ne *soupait* point, et *se couchait* de bonne heure.

Peter I. rose (used to rise) *at four o'clock in the morning; at five they* brought *him a little breakfast; he* dined *at eleven, took no supper, and* went to bed *early.*

Nous *sortîmes* hier du spectacle à dix heures.

We came out *yesterday from the theatre at ten o'clock.*

Aujourd' hui nous *avons dîné* à quatre heures.

To-day *we* have dined *at four o'clock.*

Nous *avons vu dans ce siècle* des choses si surprenantes que la postérité aura peine à les croire.

We have seen in this century *such extraordinary things that posterity will hardly believe them.*

THE COMPOUND OF THE PRESENT.

322. The *Compound of the Present of the Indicative* expresses something done during a time or period not yet expired; as, *this day*, *this week*, *this month*, *this year*, or *this century*; as.

Je les ai rencontrés ce matin.	*I have met them this morning.*
Cette année nous n' avons eu que de la pluie.	*This year we have had nothing but rain.*

523. The *Compound of the Present of the Indicative* is also used when the exact time of an action is not expressed ; as,

Nous avons parcouru la Suisse.	*We have travelled through Switzerland.*
Il a perdu son livre.	*He has lost his book.*
Scipion a vaincu Annibal.	*Scipio vanquished Hannibal.*

THE COMPOUND OF THE IMPERFECT.

524. The *Compound of the Imperfect of the Indicative* is used when a thing was past before something else happened ; as,

Nous étions déjà sortis, lorsque vous êtes arrivé.	*We had already gone away when you arrived.*

THE COMPOUND OF THE PERFECT.

525. The *Compound of the Perfect* can be used in much the same circumstances as the Compound of the Imperfect, but it is generally preceded by *quand, lorsque, dès que, aussitôt que, à peine,* &c. ; as,

A peine eus-je reçu votre lettre, que je me disposai à y répondre.	*I had* scarcely *received your letter when I prepared myself to answer it.*

THE FUTURE.

526. The *Future*, and the *Compound of the Future*, are used as in English. Learners, however, must attentively observe whether the auxiliary *will* implies the *future*, or a *wish ;* if the latter, then the verb *vouloir* must be used in French ; as,

Parlerez-vous français avec eux ?	Will *you speak* (*in*) *French with them ?*
Je *veux* parler français.	*I* will *speak* (*I wish to speak*) *French.*

527. After *quand*, when, *aussitôt que*, as soon as—though in English the present is generally used--the future must be used in French ; as,

Vous viendrez ici quand vous *voudrez.*	*You may come here when you* like.

§ V. OF THE CONDITIONAL MOOD.

528. The *Conditional Present*, and the *Compound of the Conditional Present*, are used as in English. After *si*, if, (in case), the *Imperfect* is used in French instead of the Conditional in English; as,

*S'*il *était* assez téméraire.	If *he* should be *rash enough*.

REMARK.—*Instead of* j'aurais, tu aurais, &c., j'eusse, tu eusses, &c., *are sometimes used; but never when the former could not be used instead.*

The IMPERATIVE MOOD is used as in English.

---

§ VI. OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

529. The *Subjunctive* is generally used after verbs expressing *admiration, joy, doubt, fear, surprise, wonder, wish*, or *command*; such as, *douter, craindre, trembler, avoir peur, s'étonner, exiger, commander, défendre, permettre, préférer, aimer mieux, souhaiter, désirer, vouloir*; as,

Je *doute* fort que cela *soit*.	*I doubt very much whether that is the case.*
Je *crains* qu' il ne *vienne* pas.	*I fear he will not come.*
Je *m'étonne* qu' il ne *voie* pas le danger où il est.	*I am astonished that he does not see the danger in which he is.*
J' ai *défendu* que vous *fissiez* cela.	*I have forbidden (that you should do that) you to do that.*
Je *désire* qu' il *réussisse*.	*I wish he may succeed.*

530. The *Subjunctive* is used after *Impersonal* Verbs, or verbs used impersonally, like *il faut, il importe, il se peut, il vaut mieux, il suffit*; as,

Il faut que je le *fasse*.	*I must do it.*
Il vaut mieux que cela *soit* ainsi.	*It is better it should be so.*

531. REMARK.—The Subjunctive follows *il semble* only when used interrogatively; otherwise the indicative must be employed; as,

Il me semble que je le *vois*.	*It seems to me (I think) I see him.*

532. The *Subjunctive* is used after a verb in the *interrogative* or *negative* form—in the former case not, however, when the question is merely a disguised affirmation ; as,

Je ne crois pas qu'il *vienne*.	*I do not believe he will come.*
Je ne savais pas que vous *fussiez* amis.	*I did not know you were friends.*
Croyez-vous qu'il *vienne*?	*Do you think he will come?*
Croyez-vous qu'il *viendra*?	*Do you (really) think he will come?* (The person speaking knowing that he will not come.)

533. The *Subjunctive* is used after an adjective in the *superlative* degree, followed by *qui*, *dont*, or *que*, and also generally after *premier*, *dernier*, *seul*, *unique*, if followed by *qui*, *dont* or *que* ; as,

Le plus grand monarque *qui ait* jamais régné.	*The greatest monarch that has ever reigned.*
Le *premier qui soit* entré dans la ville.	*The first that has entered the town.*
L'*unique* souvenir *que j'aie* conservé d'elle.	*The only memorial of her that I have preserved.*

534. The *Subjunctive* is used after *quelque-que; quel-que; quoi-que ; qui-que ;* and also after *nul*, *aucun*, *personne*, *pas un*, *point*, *rien*, *peu*, *guère*, if the latter are followed by *qui*, *dont* or *que* ; as,

Quelques efforts *que* vous *fassiez*.	*Whatever efforts you may make.*
Quelque belle *qu'* elle *puisse* être.	*However beautiful she may be.*
Quelle que soit votre intention.	*Whatever your intention may be.*
Quoi que vous *fassiez*.	*Whatever you may do.*
Il n'y a *personne* ici *qui* ne *soit* de cet avis.	*There is nobody here who is not of that opinion.*
Il n'y a *aucun qui* ne le *sache*.	*There is nobody who does not know that.*

535. The *Subjunctive* is used after certain conjunctions, a list of which is given page 67.

THE USE OF THE TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

536.

The *Present* is used :—

1st. After the *Present* and *Future* of the Indicative, to express something *present* or *future*.

2nd. After the *Compound of the Present Indicative*, to express something which takes place, or may take place at any time.

The *Compound of the Present* is used :—

After the *Present*, the *Compound of the Present*, and the *Future* of the Indicative, to express something *past*.

The *Imperfect* is used :—

1st. After the *Present* and *Future* of the Indicative, to express something *present* or *future* with a condition.

2nd. After any other tense than the Present or Future of the Indicative, to express something *present* or *future*.

The *Compound of the Imperfect* is used :—

1st. After the *Present* and *Future* of the Indicative, to express something *past* with a condition.

2nd. After any other tense than the Present or Future of the Indicative, to express something *past*.

EXAMPLES.

Il *prétend* que tout *dépende* de lui.	*He pretends that everything depends on him.*
La loi *veut* qu' on *obéisse*.	*The law requires that people should obey.*
Dieu *a roulu* que l'homme *soit* mortel.	*God has ordained that man should be mortal.*
Nous *sommes fâchés* que vous *ayez tenu* de pareils discours.	*We are sorry you should have expressed yourself in such terms.*
Je *doute* que vous *écrivissiez* aujourd' hui, si l' on ne vous y contraignait.	*I doubt whether you would write to-day, if you were not forced to do so.*
Nous *aimerions* que vous *vinssiez* plus souvent.	*We should like that you came oftener.*
Je *voudrais* que tu *renonçasses* à cette entreprise.	*I wish you would give up this enterprise.*
Je *doute* que vous *eussiez* écrit la semaine passée, si l' on ne vous y eût contraint.	*I doubt whether you would have written last week, if you had not been forced to do so.*
C'*était* la seule consolation qui nous *fût restée*.	*It was the only consolation that had remained for us.*

REMARKS ON SOME VERBS.

ALLER, VENIR.

537. *Aller* and *venir (de)* are often employed before another verb—the former to express that something *will be done* (just now—future) ; the latter that something *has* happened just at the moment (past) ; as,

J' *allais* me coucher quand il est venu.	*I was (just on the point of) going to bed when he came.*
Ils *vont* partir.	*They are (just) going to set out.*
Je *vais* aller me coucher.	*I am (on the point of) going to bed.*
Il *venait* de se lever et de partir.	*He had just risen and set out.*
Elle *vient* de venir.	*She has just been here.*

538. *FAILLIR, PENSER.*

Faillir and *penser* are often expressed in English by *almost, nearly;* as,

J' ai *failli* de tomber.	*I had* almost *fallen.*
Il a bien *failli* de l' obtenir.	*He had very* nearly *obtained it.*
Cette idée me *pensa* perdre comme vous l' allez voir.	*That idea had* almost *ruined me, as you shall see.*

539. *FAIRE, LAISSER.*

Faire before another verb in the Infinitive has the meaning of *to order, to command.*

Laisser before another verb in the Infinitive has the meaning of *to permit, to allow, not to prevent;* as,

Se *faire* faire un habit.	*To* order *a coat to be made.*
Il a *fait* venir un dentiste, pour se *faire* arracher une dent.	*He has* ordered *a dentist to come (in order) to have a tooth extracted.*
Il a *laissé* faire le tailleur.	*He has* allowed *the tailor to do as he liked.*
Il s' est *laissé* tromper.	*He has* allowed *himself to be deceived.*
Elle le *laisse* sortir, tant qu' il en a envie.	*She* allows *him to go out as often as he likes.*

DEVOIR, POUVOIR, VOULOIR.

540. The following examples will show how these three verbs are employed :—

Un fils *doit* respect à son père.	*A son* owes *respect to his father.*
Un homme d' honneur *doit* tenir sa parole.	*A man of honour* must *keep his word.*
Il ne *devrait* pas abandonner ses parents.	*He* ought *not to abandon his parents.*
Il *doit* être bien agréable de . . .	*It* must *be very agreeable to . . .*
Je *dois* recevoir cette somme après-demain.	*I* have *to receive this sum after to-morrow.*

Dût ma fortune être anéantie.	Should *my fortune be annihilated.*
Dussé-je périr.	Were *I to perish.*
Les sommes *dues.*	*The sums* due.
Je lui ai payé son *dû.*	*I have paid him his* due.
Il ne *peut* marcher.	*He cannot walk.*
Vous *pouvez* tout sur son père.	*You have great influence over his father.*
Puissiez-vous réussir dans vos projets !	May *you succeed in your projects!*
Cela *peut* se faire.	*That* may be *done.*
Il *se pourrait* que . . .	*It* might happen *that* . . .
Je ne *puis* rien en cela.	*I* can *do nothing in that.*
Cela ne *se peut* pas.	*That cannot be.*
Il *veut* faire ce voyage.	*He* wishes *to make this journey.*
Il n' en *veut* rien faire.	*He* will *do nothing of the kind.*
Je *voudrais* bien voir cela.	*I* should like *much to see that.*
A qui en *voulez*-vous ?	*Whom do you* want ?
Dieu le *veuille !*	*God* grant *it !*
Que *voulez*-vous *dire ?*	*What do you* mean ?
Que *veut dire* cet homme ?	*What does that man* mean ?
Veuillez me faire le plaisir de . . .	Be so kind as *to* . . .
Voulez-vous bien vous taire ?	Will *you be quiet ?*
Cela *veut* du temps.	*That* requires *time.*
Cette machine ne *veut* pas aller.	*That machine* will *not work.*
Elle est bien *voulue* dans cette maison.	*She is much* beloved *in that house.*

REMARKS ON THE PRONUNCIATION OF SOME WORDS.

CH *sounds like* K *in* archange, archétype, Bacchus, chaos, Chersonèse, chiragre, chœur, chorus, Christ, chrétien, chrétienté, écho, eucharistie, orchestre, Michel-Ange.

G *final is mute in* Strasbourg, Édimbourg, Hambourg, Pétersbourg, Wurzbourg.

L *final is not sounded in* baril, chenil, fusil, gril, outil, persil, soûl, sourcil.

P *is not sounded in* baptême, baptiser, baptismal, Baptiste, sculpter, sculpteur, sculpture; *it is, however, sounded in* septembre, septénaire, septentrion.

QU *is sounded as in English in* aquarelle, aquatique, équateur, quadrupède, quaker, in quarto.

S *is sounded in* aloès, as, atlas, bis, cens, chorus, gratis, iris, maïs, mœurs, ours, prospectus, rébus.

T *is sounded after* C; *as in* abject, direct, exact. *It is also sounded in* brut, chut, déficit, dot, est (*east*), fat, granit, lest, net, vivat, zest, zist. *It is not sounded after* C *in* instinct, amict (*pronounced* am-ee).

LIST OF WORDS OF PECULIAR PRONUNCIATION.

Aix, *ès.*
Amen, *âm-ayn.*
Août, *oo.*
Aoûteron, *oot-rong.*
Archevêque, *ar-shuh-vayk.*
Auxerre, *ó-sè-r.*
Avant-hier, *a-vang-ti-èr.*
Avril, *a-vri-i.*
Belfort, *bé-for.*
Bourg, *bourk.*
Cadix, *ka-diss.*
Caen, *kan* (town in France).
Cap, *kap.*
Cep, *sayp.*
Chef-d'œuvre, *shay-deu-vr.*
Chef-lieu, *shayf-lieu.*
Cicerone, *tshe-tshay-ro-nay.*
Clef, *klay.*
Coq, *kok.*
Doigt, *dwâ.*
Éden, *ay-dayn.*
Enivrer, *âng-ne-vray.*
Ennoblir, *âng-no-bleer.*
Ennui, *âng-nuee.*
Ennuyer, *âng-nuee-yay.*
Faon, *fâng.*
Fil, *feel.*
Fils, *fees.*
Gentil, *zhang-tee.*
Gentilhomme, *zhang-te-yom.*
Hymen, *e-mayn.*
Hymne, *eemn.*
Joug, *zhoog* (*g* very soft).
Legs, *lay.*
Metz, *mèss.*
Michel, *mi-shèl.*
Oignon, *o-nyong.*
Oublieur on prononce *oublieux —oo-ble-yuh*—(Acad.).
Paon, *pâng.*
Paonne, *pan.*
Patriarche, *pat-re-ansh.*
Poêle, *po-âl.*
Pouls, *poo.*
Saône, *só-n.*
Taon, *tong.*